Gulliver presented to the Queen of Balnibarbi.

THE

TRAVELS

OF

Mr. *John Gulliver*,

Son to Capt. *Lemuel Gulliver*.

Tranſlated from the *FRENCH*,
By *J. Lockman*.

VOL. I.

LONDON:
Printed for SAM. HARDING, at the *Bible* and *Anchor*, on the Pavement in St. *Martin's-Lane*. MDCCXXXI.

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

THE

COUNTESS

OF

HAROLD.

Madam,

THOSE who devote themſelves to the Muſes, are ſo little encourag'd by the Great, that I cannot but eſteem your Ladyſhip's goodneſs, in in-

 dulging

dulging the ambition I had of inſcribing this tranſlation to you, as a peculiar happineſs, and an omen of its ſucceſs.

Your known diſinclination to applauſe, eſpecially that of a publick nature, tho' every action of your life deſerves it, lays me under a double obligation to your Ladyſhip.

That your Ladyſhip ſhould be eminent for the practice of all the milder virtues, is no wonder, when we conſider the illuſtrious family from which you are ſprung. Your noble

noble anceſtors, at the ſame time that they were the ornament of the *Britiſh* court, were conſpicuous for all thoſe qualities which render human nature amiable. And here your Ladyſhip's excellent Father the Earl of *THANET*, ſhines with diſtinguiſh'd luſtre, who, of all men, ſeems to have had the deepeſt ſenſe of thoſe admirable words of *Pythagoras*; that, "If we can in any "thing reſemble the Gods, "'tis in doing good, and "ſpeaking the truth.

The

Dedication.

The tranſition from this great character to that of your Ladyſhip, would be natural; but your commands to the contrary, force me, tho' with the greateſt reluctance, to be ſilent. I am with the higheſt reſpect,

Madam,

Your Ladyſhip's

moſt devoted

humble Servant,

John Lockman.

THE Tranſlator's Preface.

I ſhall not attempt a character of the following work, nor enter into the genius and moral of it; the author, under the feign'd name of the editor, having done it at large.

Nor ſhall I, tho' poſſibly it may be expected, pretend to draw a contraſt between the inimitable Travels of captain Lemuel Gulliver *and thoſe of his ſon: ſuch a task, as it would be very difficult, and of too delicate a nature, at leaſt for me; ſo it might perhaps give ſome perſons, for whoſe judgment I have the greateſt deference, a mean opinion of my taſte. All I ſhall obſerve on this head, is, that the invention, the ſpirit and humour in the following travels, made the tranſlation of them a delightful exerciſe.*

As the adventures of our young traveller, have been receiv'd very favourably by the French, *I hope his countrymen will ſhew them the ſame indulgence. This I won'd*

not

not doubt of, were I at liberty to point out the author, whose works have made him deservedly famous in the republic of letters; but as he has thought proper to conceal his name on this occasion, 'twould, methinks, be equally rude to publish it, as to force off a lady's mask.

With regard to my Version, I've endeavour'd to give it in as easy a dress, as the time I had for it wou'd allow; to infuse a little of that spirit, which is the life of translations; and to file away those roughnesses which make them flat and languid, and so very unlike their originals. Nor have I, I hope, been wanting in fidelity, except in two or three places of no consequence to the beauty of the work, in which our author happen'd to mistake, occasion'd by his being unacquainted with some of our customs.

Notwithstanding the writings of the French *are so much sought after by us, yet 'tis well known, that in general, they are look'd upon as light, wordy, as 'tis term'd, and consequently uninform'd with the manly sense of our* English *writers. How far this may be true, I shall not take upon me to determine*

termine directly; but if I may be allow'd to ſpeak my thoughts, my humble opinion is, that 'tis chiefly owing to the bad Verſions which have been made from that tongue, eſpecially of the great Writers in it; and well may they be found wordy, ſince their words only are tranſlated. Was an artleſs ſculptor to imitate a beautiful antique buſto, or a ſign-painter to copy a Raphael *or a* Titian; *'tis certain that the grace, the ſpirit and fire of the originals would be entirely loſt in their performances.*

Tho' I've preſum'd to give my opinion ſo freely on this head, I yet wou'd not have it imagin'd I mean it as a compliment to my own talents. And, indeed, as this is the farthеſt from my thoughts, ſo were my capacity in this province ever ſo great, I yet ſhou'd think I had very little to boaſt of.

I cannot but take notice of the contempt in which Romances *in general are had, (and conſequently the writers of them,) tho' the moral be ever ſo excellent, by multitudes of perſons, merely becauſe they are fictitious. That the greateſt part of our Romances are very trifling, I readily grant;*

but

but tho' I wou'd not presume to lessen the dignity of history; its vast usefulness, or the merits of a good historian, I yet believe that a greater genius is requir'd for the former. The historian has materials to work upon, whereas the other is oblig'd to spin them out of his own fancy, and to strike out a new creation, as it were, of his own.

But to return to my translation. As several arts are transiently treated of, and some burlesq'd in the course of this work, it consequently made my task the harder; however, I flatter myself I've translated those passages with tolerable propriety. What I have chiefly to crave the reader's indulgence for, is with regard to the sea terms, in which, tho' I took the utmost care, I possibly may sometimes not have hit upon the true dialect.

If this piece meets with some success, I intend to prepare for the press, a translation of an excellent work entitled Critical Reflections on Poetry and Painting, *by l'Abbé du* Bos, *Secretary of the* French *Academy at* Paris, *who has done me the honour to offer me his assistance, in order to make the* English *Edition as complete as possible.*

THE

THE *French* Editor's PREFACE.

THE Travels of Capt. Lemuel Gulliver *have met with ſuch ſucceſs, that 'tis with the utmoſt diffidence we publiſh the following; and as the public are ſo juſtly prejudic'd againſt the continuation of all celebrated pieces, we dare not flatter ourſelves ſo far as to think, this will paſs uncenſur'd. The general opinion is, that a writer who continues a a work, is a kind of copiſt, that treads ſervilely in his author's ſteps; that he does no more than glean after him; and having no talent at invention, the moſt he can do, is merely to enlarge and adjuſt his own ideas by thoſe of the original writer. The public always ſuſpects, that he has no other view, than, under the auſpices of another work, to raiſe the reputation*

of his own; not knowing (unhappily for him) that the more they have applauded a piece, the leſs inclination they have to approve another in the ſame taſte.

This being ſuppos'd, it may be proper to obſerve here, that notwithſtanding the following work is entitled the New Gulliver, *it yet is in no manner a ſequel of that publiſh'd under the name of Capt.* Lemuel Gulliver. *There is neither the ſame traveller, the ſame kind of incidents, nor is the caſt of the allegory like that of the former; in a word, the only conformity is in the title. The former was the father, ours is the ſon, and the reader will ſoon perceive, we might juſtly have given another name to our hero; and that the only reaſon why we prefer'd this to any other, was from a ſuppoſition, that as the public have made the philoſophical, and bold ideas of Capt.* Lemuel Gulliver *familiar to them; they would be leſs ſurpriz'd at thoſe of* John Gulliver *his ſon, when they ſaw them united together in ſome meaſure, under a like title: for tho' the fictions are very*

different,

different, there yet is a kind of analogy between them.

In Capt. Lemuel's *travels, we are entertain'd with dwarfs and giants of an unaccountable ſize; a race of immortal men; an aerial iſland, and a republic of rational horſes. In thoſe of the ſon, the reader will be conveyed into one country where the fair ſex have the ſuperiority; a ſecond whoſe men ſoon grow old, and enjoy but a very ſhort life; a third whoſe inhabitants, tho' ſuperlatively deform'd and ugly, do nevertheleſs appear handſome in the eyes of their countrymen; laſtly, another, whoſe natives are indulg'd a long life, and the advantage of returning to the bloom of youth, when they have attain'd to half their years. 'Tis by the ſingularity of theſe ſuppoſitions, that the two works in queſtion may reſemble in general; but the ſuppoſitions differ widely in themſelves, and the morals which reſult from each, have no manner of affinity. The ſon's adventures are entirely different from thoſe of the father, and altogether independant on them; and are no otherwiſe a ſequel of Capt.* Lemuel's, *than,*

(pardon the compariſon) the Adventures of Telemachus *are a continuation of the* Odyſſey. *'Tis well known, that thoſe two poems (if both may be allow'd that name) are entirely independant; are neither in the ſame caſt, nor have the ſame object: and 'twas merely from the faint ſimilitude of a few features, and a very ſlight conformity, that the* Archbiſhop of Cambray's Telemachus, *was ſaid to be a ſequel of* Homer's Odyſſey.

As fiction of every kind is contemptible, unleſs it be of uſe to mankind, and has truth couch'd under it; we flatter ourſelves that the reader will eaſily diſcover the moral which is ſhadow'd under the images we here preſent him with; not to mention thoſe we have interſpers'd up and down the dialogues, wherever there was an opportunity for ſo doing. The firſt fiction, for inſtance, will ſhew, that the maxim with regard to Baſhfulneſs, *which has taken deep root among us, and receives a ſanction from the depravity of the age, is a very pernicious one. We imagine, that this virtue is reſtrain'd wholly to the fair ſex; and upon that pretence, men fancy that*

that the loſs of it, or the perſuading women to baniſh it from their minds, is no reflection on their honour. In reading of a place where the very reverſe happens; a country where the female inhabitants enjoying a ſuperiority over the other ſex, act the ſame part as the men do among us, and imitate their depravity; we cannot but think their conduct very ſtrange and unaccountable, and muſt neceſſarily diſapprove it. Nevertheleſs, when once women are ſuppos'd ſuperior to the other ſex, we are not to wonder much at this diſorder; whence 'tis plain, that men wou'd not be ſo corrupt on this article, did they not abuſe their ſuperiority. But muſt then the predominant ſex be, in one ſenſe, the weakeſt; and take advantage of their power, to attack inceſſantly, with a premeditated contempt, thoſe whom they will triumph over? This moral of theirs is univerſally known; nothing was wanting, but to draw it forth into action, in like manner as we have done ſeveral others, which the reader will meet with in the body of the work.

The country whoſe inhabitants, tho' they ſoon grow old and die early, do nevertheleſs in ſome meaſure live longer than we; will of itſelf ſuggeſt ſo many reflections, that it were needleſs to acquaint the reader with the moral of this allegory, which alludes to the vain and idle uſe we make of life.

The particulars of Gulliver's *dwelling among ſavage nations; and his diſcourſe with the people, are not ſo ſurprizing as the preceeding adventures, and include a ſelf-evident, paradoxical philoſophy. Here all regularly-conſtituted nations, are cenſur'd by a virtuous ſavage, who being guided by no other light than that of nature; pronounces, that what we call civil ſociety, politeneſs, and decorum, is no other than a vicious commerce, and the creature of a corrupted fancy, which prejudice only makes us eſteem.*

The groteſque ſhape of the people, ſubject to the emperor Doſſogroboskow, *and the agreeable idea they form to themſelves of one another's perſons, denote, that beauty and deformity, a good and ill grace, are mere arbitrary qualities.*

Laſtly,

Laſtly, The Letaliſpons, *a people, who return to the bloom of youth at a certain age, and enjoy a long life, will ſhew how ridiculouſly the greateſt part of mankind act, in valuing life ſo much, and taking ſo little thought to prolong it; and ſpending it in ſuch a manner, as tho' they did not think it worth their care. As to the ſingular notions which this people have form'd to themſelves, with regard to animals, and their laws of health, let thoſe who will make their advantage of them. Theſe opinions, tho' they poſſibly may have ſome foundation, will hardly ever be put in practice.*

It were needleſs to mention the different iſlands, which are here ſuppos'd to be in Terra del Fuego. *We thought proper to make a* Dutchman *deſcribe them, leſt, thoſe whimſical ideas, which have no manner of probability, and are merely allegorical, would, had our traveller related them, have made him talk out of character; and ruin'd his veracity with the public, in caſe he himſelf had told thoſe particulars.*

Dr. Ferruginer's *letter, inſerted at the end of the ſecond volume, will*

be of ſervice in giving an air of probability to the ſeveral aſtoniſhing particulars that are related in theſe travels, and told, as ſo many matters of fact. The great erudition of that gentleman, who peruſes all books antient and modern, purpoſely to extract from them ſuch particulars, as may ſeriouſly ſupport the groteſque ideas which compoſe this work, may poſſibly form a pretty agreeable contraſt. After all, theſe learned quotations are of uſe to young Gulliver, *or to the perſon who ſpeaks in his name; for whenever we attempt to ſhadow truth under images, we ought to have probability chiefly in view.*

Here D... S.....t's genius has been very much admir'd, who in his travels of Capt. Lemuel Gulliver, *impoſes in ſuch a manner, upon the imagination, that he almoſt gives an air of veriſimility, to things manifeſtly impoſſible; and by a ſeries of incidents delicately deſcrib'd and connected, ſeduces agreeably the judgment. As the fictions in the following work are leſs ſingular and bold, they conſequently coſt the author leſs pains, in his endeavours to elude the underſtanding.*

We

We only wiſh, that this little work, may be indulg'd part of the favourable reception which the tranſlation of that of D... S.....t, met with in France. *I am ſenſible that the public have been very much divided in opinion, with regard to the merits of that work; which ſome look'd upon, as one of the beſt that has been publiſh'd theſe many years; while others conſider'd it merely as a rhapſody of trifling and inſipid fictions. The reaſon of this latter judgment, is, that thoſe people conſider'd only the naked circumſtances, abſtracted from the wit and allegory, which nevertheleſs is very obvious in almoſt every page. They complain'd there were no intrigues, no ſituations, or circumſtances of things to effect the imagination; Theſe would have had a regular romance, inſtead of which, they were entertain'd with nothing but a ſeries of allegorical travels, unenliven'd with ſo much as one ſingle love adventure. Some regard has been had to their taſte in the preſent work; but at the ſame time, care has been taken to do this ſparingly, for fear of deviating*

ting too much from the work, from which our hint was firſt borrow'd.

Theſe are the reflections I thought proper to prefix to this work, agreeable to the intentions both of the author and tranſlator. The latter, who was pleas'd to entruſt me with the publication of his work, has, by certain expreſſions which dropt from him, given me ſome reaſon to believe it was written by himſelf; however, this is a circumſtance I dare not poſitively aſſert.

THE

THE CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

THE author's education. His natural inclination to travel. His application to his ſtudies. His diſtaſte of the ſchool philoſophy; is divided whether he ſhall devote himſelf to letters or buſineſs. Embarks for China. Page 1.

CHAP. II.

A ſtorm ariſes; the veſſel is drove into the eaſtern ocean, and afterwards taken by pirates of the Iſland of Babilary. *The author is carried into the queen's ſeraglio.* p. 13.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The author ſoon learns the Babilarian *tongue, by a new and uncommon method. His converſation with the director of the ſeraglio, who informs him that the poſts and employments of the ſtate are fill'd by women. The origin of this cuſtom.* p. 24.

CHAP. IV.

Sequel of the diſcourſe between the author and the director of the ſeraglio. Manners of the women and men of the iſland of Babilary. *Deſcription of the ſeraglio, and of thoſe who were confin'd in it with the author; their employments, jealouſies,* &c. p. 45.

CHAP. V.

The queen viſits the ſeraglio. The author is preſented to her; has the good fortune to pleaſe her. He is nominated and declared the queen's husband for the

the enſuing year. He leaves the ſeraglio and reſides in the palace. p. 52.

CHAP. VI.

The learning of the women of Babilary. *Tribunals or courts compos'd of men. Different religion of the ſexes. Manner how women adminiſter juſtice, manage the revenues, and carry on Trade. Different academies.* p. 61.

CHAP. VII.

Mejax, *governeſs of the principal port of the iſland, falls in love with the author, who alſo is captivated with her charms. She carries him off; delivers at the ſame time all his companions out of ſlavery, and flies away with them on board a veſſel, which ſhe had got ready for that purpoſe.* p. 79.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The queen of Babilary *ſends two veſſels in purſuit of* Mejax; *a bloody engagement enſues. Victorious* Mejax *is wounded and dies. They caſt anchor before an iſland. Danger the author is in.* p. 99.

CHAP. IX.

The author is ſhipwreck'd and eſcapes in a canoo. He goes on ſhore on the iſland of Tilibet, *where he is made a ſlave. Deſcription of the manner of its inhabitants. The ſhort term of years they are allow'd to live, and the uſe they make of life.* p. 110.

CHAP. X.

The author eſcapes from the iſland of Tilibet, *and goes on board a* Portugueze *veſſel which puts into an iſland. He is taken by ſavages, who are going*

ing to knock out his brains, and eat him. In what manner he is deliver'd. p. 134.

CHAP. XI.

Whilſt part of the crew is on ſhore, thoſe who ſtaid on board the veſſel, weigh anchor. The author, with ſeveral Portugueze, *is oblig'd to continue a long time in the iſland of* Mahoonam. *They make an alliance with a nation of ſavages.* p. 151.

CHAP. XII.

The author falls in love with a pretty female ſavage. His converſation with her and her father, who cenſures the manners of the Europeans. p. 163.

CHAP. XIII.

Battle between the Kiſtrimaux *and* Taouaous. *The latter, being aſſiſted by the* Portugueze, *are victorious. The*

The author makes a ſpeech, to diſſuade the ſavages from putting the priſoners to death. A peace is concluded between the two nations. p. 195.

THE

THE TRAVELS OF *John Gulliver*, &c.

CHAP. I.

The author's education. His natural inclination to travel. His application to his ſtudies. His diſtaſte of the ſchool philoſophy; is divided whether he ſhall devote himſelf to letters or buſineſs. Embarks for China.

have obſerv'd, that children generally have the ſame inclinations with their fathers, unleſs education happens to change their natural bent. I know, however, that they

ſometimes take after their mothers only; whence it follows, for inſtance, that the ſon of a poet is found to be a prudent, ſagacious man; the ſon of a philoſopher, a coxcomb or a devotee; and the ſon of a traveller, unactive and ſedentary.

As to my ſelf, I can ſay that I take very much after my father, not only with regard to the exterior qualities, but alſo thoſe of my mind; whence, I preſume to flatter my ſelf, that I am the genuine ſon of the celebrated Capt. *Lemuel Gulliver*, and of Mrs. *Mary Burton* his wife, a woman whoſe conduct was ever irreproachable. As I had been brought up in my father's houſe, where the diſcourſe generally turn'd upon his travels, and the wonderful diſcoveries he had made, in the various oceans he had run over; I had an inſuperable inclination from my infancy, to go to ſea. 'Twas to no purpoſe, that deſcriptions were ſometimes made to me of ſtorms and other caſualties, and the dreadful dangers to which my father had been expos'd;

curioſity

curioſity prevail'd over fear; and I was willing to ſuffer as many hardſhips as my father had done, provided I might ſee as many wonders.

He found me thus diſpos'd at his return from his third voyage, which was that of *Laputa*; when overjoy'd to find ſo great a conformity between his inclinations and my own, he promis'd to carry me along with him, the next time he went to ſea. 'Tis probable he did not intend to ſet out immediately; for I being but fourteen years of age, was too young to follow him at that time. And indeed he was not as good as his word; for ſhortly after, embarking at *Portſmouth* the 2d of *Auguſt* 1710, he took leave of no body but my mother, and left me inconſolable for his haſty and unexpected departure.

Never child in the world wiſh'd more earneſtly to be a man than I did; however, this was not merely that I might be ſecur'd from the accidents to which childhood is liable; or for the ſake of injoying my liberty,

and of acting as I thought proper; but only that I might be enabled to bear the hardſhips which are ſo frequently met with at ſea; and be big enough to be taken on board a ſhip. I went to ſchool againſt my inclination, when I us'd to argue thus with my ſelf; Why ſhould I apply my ſelf to languages, that will never do me the leaſt ſervice? Will the *Indians*, the *Chineze*, the *Americans*, value me the more for underſtanding Greek and Latin? Why am I not rather taught the *Aſiatic*, the *African*, or *American* languages, ſince theſe undoubtedly wou'd be of infinitely greater advantage to me? However, notwithſtanding theſe reflections, which ſometimes made me hate my ſtudies, I nevertheleſs made a very good progreſs in them.

That which gave me the greateſt diſguſt, was the ſtudy of philoſophy as taught in our univerſities. The famous profeſſor under whom I learnt, us'd to tell his pupils with a grave face and tone, that the logic of the ſchools

ſchools was abſolutely uſeful in all ſciences; that it directed the mind in its ſeveral operations, and gave it a juſtneſs which could not be obtain'd by any other means. He even made us frequently diſpute on this very ſubject; but then he himſelf argued ſo wretchedly on all occaſions, and the ſeveral operations of his dull, heavy ſoul were ſo ill directed; that I may juſtly affirm, he himſelf was for ever arguing againſt the ridiculous opinion he pretended to maintain.

Metaphyſicks, methoughts ſeem'd more adapted to contract and blunt the faculties of the mind, than to give it a juſt turn of thinking; and I abhorr'd its chimerical ſubtilties. Morality, whoſe views are to rectify the heart, was made dubious and problematical, and caſt into abſtruſe and knotty queſtions. As to phyſicks, ſo little is learnt in the ſchools, that the fruit which reſults from them, does not compenſate the time they engroſs. In my opinion, the ſyſtems of Sir *Iſaac Newton*, *Des Cartes*, and ſome other modern phi-

loſophers, is the beſt courſe of philoſophy a man can go through; theſe not employing a barbarous ſeries of ſcholaſtic diſtinctions to impoſe upon the mind. And indeed, I can affirm I am wholly obliged to thoſe Books for the little philoſophy I know; and that I have very much enlarg'd my knowledge in that branch of ſcience, ever ſince I forgot all I had learnt at college.

During my Studies, I applied my ſelf very cloſely to geography; and by that means, tho' I cou'd not travel in perſon, I yet had the pleaſure of rambling up and down the world in imagination. I was extremely delighted with all relations of foreign countries; I us'd to ask travellers a thouſand queſtions, and convers'd frequently with ſailors; and the ſight of a ſhip compleatly rigg'd, wou'd raiſe ſudden and involuntary tranſports in my ſoul, like to thoſe which *Achilles* felt, at the ſight of a ſword or lance.

My mother finding herſelf burthen'd with ſeveral children, and no great matter to maintain them with, bid

me

me uſe all my endeavours to get ſome ſmall place in the treaſury or exchequer. She wou'd often tell me, of a great number of wealthy commiſſioners, and others employ'd in the revenue, who had once condeſcended, to accept of the meaneſt and moſt inſignificant employments. However, notwithſtanding all the arguments ſhe brought on theſe occaſions, ſhe yet could never perſuade me to embrace ſo ſlippery a ſtate of life, which at the ſame time is not very reputable; where knavery is not always ſucceſsful; and where a man runs the hazard of ſpending his days in the inſupportable dependance of a numberleſs multitude of maſters, more imperious than venerable; whoſe ficklenеſs, frequently plunges their ſubalterns into the misfortunes of the famiſh'd * *Ereſichthon.*

Had it been poſſible for me to lead a ſedentary life, methinks I ſhould have choſe the profeſſion of a ſcholar, pre-

* *See* Ovid's Metamorphoſes, *Book XI.*

ſerable to all others. You are born, ſays an amiable man of learning one day to me, with a moſt happy diſpoſition to ſcience: nature has indulg'd you memory, underſtanding, genius; a fruitful imagination, and taſte: you may, by the uncommon aſſemblage of all theſe qualities, and a proper exerciſe of your talents, do the higheſt ſervice to the literary world, and be an honour both to your family and country. You are very ſenſible, that perſons who make a figure in the ſciences, are here had in the higheſt eſteem. *England* becomes more and more the glorious ſeat of ſcience, and of all that is curious in the whole compaſs of knowledge. Among us, a learned philoſopher, a judicious and knowing hiſtorian, a delicate writer of fine ſenſe, is never ſuffer'd to pine away in miſery; preferments, to which the learned and witty have the moſt juſt claim, are beſtow'd on them only. Literary merit is here always call'd forth from obſcurity, and rewarded in a ſuitable manner. Embrace, my dear child, a calm and honour-

able

able way of life, in which, without amaſſing ſo much wealth as many of our commiſſioners, you will acquire a ſum, as by falling infinitely ſhort of the wealth abovemention'd, will be more worthy a man of honour upon that very account.

Thus was I alternately prompted to apply my ſelf to buſineſs or letters. But how wide is the difference between thoſe two conditions of life! the man of buſineſs is enflam'd with a deſire of heaping up wealth; the Scholar bends his thoughts wholly to the enriching his mind; the one raiſes his fortune, the other gains nothing but a name; the one enriches himſelf with the ſpoils of the living, the latter with thoſe of the dead; the former has learning and learned men in equal contempt, the latter deſpiſes rich men more than he does riches; the former enjoys life, the latter exiſts after death.

In 1714, being then eighteen years of age; of a tall ſtature, and a ſtrong, robuſt complexion, I pack'd up my things, and without once taking leave

of

of my mother, or any of my relations, having got a ſmall ſum of money which ſome good friends had lent me, and a few books, I went to *Woolwich*, where I had heard that an under-writer was wanted for a veſſel that was juſt ready to ſet ſail for *China*.

Tho' I had neither experience or recommendation, I nevertheleſs flatter'd my ſelf with the hopes of getting this place; and in that view, I went and offer'd my ſervice to Capt. *Harrington*, who was to command the ſhip. My poſt was not very advantageous or honourable; however, as it gave me an opportunity of going to ſea, there was nothing in the world I ſo earneſtly deſir'd. Beſides, I knew that ſeveral of our moſt celebrated Tars, as well as a great number of our wealthieſt traders, had firſt ſet out in an infinitely meaner capacity.

I told the captain, that I was a pennyleſs young fellow, whoſe only refuge was a little education, and a great deal of honour; that having gone thro' a courſe of ſtudies with tolerable ſucceſs,

ſucceſs, I knew ſomething; that I had a ſtrong inclination to go to ſea; and concluded with ſaying, that I thought my ſelf qualified for the place, and therefore begg'd him to let me have it. The captain taking very little notice of what I told him concerning my ſtudies, only ask'd me whether I underſtood accompts. As my mother had made me learn them very early, it was an eaſy matter for me to ſatisfy him in that particular. He continued to ask me ſeveral queſtions, to all which I gracefully made the moſt ſatisfactory replies; ſo that ſeeming to approve of my underſtanding, my perſon and behaviour, he gave me the employment I deſir'd. I was overjoy'd at my ſucceſs, particularly when we weigh'd anchor, which was the 23d of *July*, 1714.

My firſt endeavours were to inſinuate my ſelf into the favour of our captain and the officers, and to gain the eſteem of the whole crew. Tho', one would think that the women only ſhould conſider a man's perſon; 'tis yet certain, that

that a handſome, well-built young fellow, commonly pleaſes univerſally, when the qualities of his mind correſpond with thoſe of his body; eſpecially if he be vertuous, and a perſon of good ſenſe. I cannot ſay whether this happy aſſemblage was found in me; and whether my advantageous exterior, did not as much conduce to gain me the eſteem of all, as my prudence, my polite behaviour, and my eaſy, even, and complaiſant temper. Captain *Harrington* diſcover'd the eſteem and friendſhip he had for me upon all occaſions. My cloſe application to buſineſs; the progreſs I made in navigation; the judicious reflections I form'd on various ſubjects; my prudent and circumſpect behaviour; and the bravery I ſhew'd on all occaſions, made him frequently ſay, that I ſhou'd one day be very rich, and perhaps attain the higheſt honours in the navy. This applauſe inſpir'd me with emulation, and rais'd a ſecret pride in my mind, which I nevertheleſs conceal'd with the utmoſt caution; firmly

perſuaded

perſuaded that nothing is more apt to make us loſe the eſteem the world may have for us, than our ſeeming to fancy we have obtain'd it. I was already puff'd up with the ambitious thoughts of a young *Oxonian*, who has taken his batchelor's degree, and fancies he ſees a biſhop's chair preparing for him in diſtant proſpect; happily for my ſelf, I had neither vices or ignorance to diſguiſe.

CHAP. II.

A ſtorm ariſes; the veſſel is drove into the eaſtern ocean, and afterwards taken by pirates of the Iſland of Babilary. *The author is carried into the queen's ſeraglio.*

I ſhall not give an account of the diſferent winds that blew during our courſe; the fine or bad weather we had; the various adventures we met with; or the Iſlands we were oblig'd to put into, to take in water and proviſions; ſuch a detail wou'd be neither inſtructive

inſtructive or amuſing, and 'tis not my deſign to write any thing merely to tire the reader.

We had already paſs'd the ſtraits of *Sunda*, and found our ſelves oppoſite to the gulph of *Conchinchina*, in the month of *June* 1715, when we met an engliſh veſſel commanded by Captain *Jefferies*. We ſent out our long-boat to enquire how trade went at *Canton*, a port of *China*, where moſt *European* ſhips generally touch, in order to ſell their lading, and take in the commodities of thoſe countries. He inform'd us, that the port abovemention'd was crouded with *European* veſſels, ſo that the commodities they had brought from *Europe*, ſold for a very trifle; and that thoſe of *China*, eſpecially the raw ſilk of *Namkim*, ſold very dear; for which reaſon he adviſ'd us to make for the port of *Emoui* in the province of *Fokien*.

We conſider'd, that it wou'd be much better for us to put into that port, ſince, purſuant to the inſtructions of our owners, we were to return by the ſouth ſea.

ſea. Accordingly we follow'd the fatal advice which Capt. *Jefferies* gave us, when leaving the iſland of *Macao* and the port of *Canton* to our ſtarboard, we enter'd the ſea of *China* about the middle of *July*. We knew that 'tis dangerous ſailing on that ſea, in the months of *Auguſt* and *September*; however we hop'd we ſhould get into the road of *Emoui* the beginning of *Auguſt*, and not be overtaken by a *Tiſon*. Theſe *Tiſons* are hurricanes, which generally begin eaſtward, tho' they often veer round the compaſs in leſs than four hours. The *Chineze* call them *Tuſans*, whence they are call'd *Tiſons* by the *Europeans*.

Auguſt the 2d, we got within 30 leagues of *Emoui*, and were overjoy'd to find our ſelves ſo near the port, when on a ſudden we were overtaken by the terrible hurricanes abovemention'd. At the ſame time a dreadful ſtorm aroſe, and the ſea ran mountains high. Our main-maſt was carried away, and moſt of our ſails were tore to pieces. For four and fourty hours

hours together, we were ſurrounded with a pitchy darkneſs; death with all its train of terrors was preſent to our imagination; and we found we had been drove a vaſt many leagues, without knowing whither we were going. Our captain diſcover'd the greateſt intrepidity, experience, and preſence of mind on this occaſion; and animated the whole crew by his example. As for my own part, I was indefatigable, which afterwards increas'd very much the love and eſteem he had for me. At laſt the ſtorm abated inſenſibly.

At day break, we computed we were got into the eaſtern ocean, above the iſland of *Niphon*, the largeſt of the iſlands of *Japan*. We then thought proper to ſteer ſouth-weſt, in order to reach *Emoui*. A week after we diſcover'd an iſland, that appear'd of a great extent, which we miſtook for the iſland of *Formoſa*. We made for that iſland, the wind being favourable, when we ſaw a large veſſel bearing down upon us, which ſeem'd

to

to be a pirate, and reſolv'd to give us chaſe, and board us if poſſible. They crouded all their Sail, and being come within cannon ſhot, pour'd in ſeveral broad ſides upon us, ſo that we were oblig'd to ſtrike, after having fought an hour and half. The conquerors boarded us ſabre in hand, and having bound us, they carried us into their own veſſel, where the priſoners were divided into three claſſes, *viz.* the old, the middle-ag'd, and young men. The latter were ſubdivided into two claſſes; one whereof was of ſuch as were handſome and well-ſhap'd, among which laſt I had the honour of being included. Theſe barbarians, who while their ſabres were drawn, wore a terrible aſpect, now appear'd polite and humane; they were all beardleſs; had long hair; and moſt of them ſeem'd ſhort of ſtature, young, and exquiſitely beautiful.

Some time after, the captain of the pirates came to the place where I and my companions lay, and having view'd us all, he came up to me, kiſs'd my hand, and carried me into his cabbin,

where he careſs'd me in ſuch a manner as ſurpriz'd me very much, for I had no notion that this captain was a woman.

I then ſaw a man come in to us, who ſeem'd advanc'd in years. The majeſty of his face was heightned by a venerable beard. He was much taller than the reſt of the barbarians, and had a more maſculine air. I was afterwards inform'd that he was a royal commiſſioner, whoſe office was to ſuperintend the prizes. Aſſoon as the captain ſaw him, he began to diſguiſe his paſſion, and ſoon after left me alone with him. *Zindernein*, for that was the comptroller's name, having obſerv'd that the captain was very ſweet upon me, gave me to underſtand it would be for my advantage to be prudent, and preſerve my honour with the ſtricteſt care. Immediately he order'd me to go into his cabbin, where a bed was prepar'd for me; and he ſeem'd to watch me narrowly till we arriv'd in the iſland.

This iſland, as I then found, was call'd *Babilary*, a word ſignifying in the

the language of the country, the *glory of women.* We caſt anchor in the port two days after, when we immediately ſaw a great number of the inhabitants advancing towards us, who congratulated their countrymen on the prize they had taken. All my companions having been expos'd to ſale the next day, were bought at different prices, according to their age and perſonal qualities; and Capt. *Harrington* was ſold cheaper than the reſt, becauſe he was the oldeſt of the crew; but as for my ſelf, I was not put up. Upon our landing, *Zindernein* took me with him in a kind of calaſh drawn by four beaſts very like ſtags; and in leſs than two hours, we arrived at *Ramai*, the capital of the iſland, where the court reſided, about twelve leagues from the port we landed at. At our arrival, a numberleſs multitude of people crouded about us; and I heard them crying aloud on all ſides, *Sa-bala-coorooccocoo*, that is, as I afterwards underſtood, *how handſome this foreigner is!*

We alighted at the gate of a palace,

which appear'd very magnificent; the entrance whereof was guarded by a conſiderable number of young ſoldiers. *Zindernein* having introduc'd me, carried me through many apartments, where I was met by ſeveral young men very ſplendidly dreſt. They all view'd me, but without once opening their lips, being aw'd by the preſence of my conductor. I was afterwards made to repoſe my ſelf in an apartment, whither cloaths were immediately brought me by a dozen old women, whom I took for ſo many men, and theſe made ſigns for me to undreſs my ſelf; I obey'd with all the decency poſſible, and immediately was dreſt in a white veſt of the fineſt flax, and a red ſilk gown.

Soon after I was conducted into a hall, where a noble banquet was prepar'd. I was order'd to place my ſelf at table in the moſt honourable ſeat. *Zindernein* ſat down next to me, and the reſt of the ſeats were fill'd by thoſe young perſons, who had crouded about me upon my arrival at the palace.

The

The reader will ſuppoſe, I was very much aſtoniſh'd at every thing I ſaw, and that I did not know what to judge of my condition. *Zindernein* cheer'd me with his careſſes; and by the ſigns he made, gave me to underſtand I was to be happy. During the entertainment, ſeveral matters were diſcours'd upon that I did not underſtand, which conſequently made the time move a little heavily: however, being prodigiouſly hungry, I eat very heartily, which ſeem'd to pleaſe *Zindernein*. I found, by the motion of the eyes of thoſe who ſat at table, that I was the topic of a great part of their converſation: ſometimes they wou'd direct their glances to me, when I ſeem'd to be the ſubject of their diſpute, whence I imagin'd, that they differ'd in opinion about me. At the concluſion of the feaſt, we were entertain'd with a conſort of muſic both vocal and inſtrumental, which gave me but very little pleaſure; for their muſic, to my ear, ſeem'd vaſtly languid, artleſs, inſipid, unvaried, and grate-

ſingly effeminate, in ſhort like that of the † *French*.

Being very much tir'd, I gave *Zindernein* to underſtand that I wanted a little reſt. He himſelf conducted me into an apartment magnificently furniſh'd, where two old women who waited my coming, undreſs'd me. I went to bed, and *Zindernein* taking his leave, promis'd to come and viſit me the next morning. I was left alone, and my chamber door was lock'd.

I then gave my ſelf up to the moſt melancholy reflections. I now, ſays I, am confin'd in a real priſon; I have loſt my liberty, and ſhall be forc'd to ſpend my days in this place, without the leaſt hopes of ever recovering it. But wherefore then is this magnificence, and all theſe gaudy ſcenes of delight? How auguſt is this priſon! What is to be my fate? Am I

† *As our author is an* engliſhman, *we have made him ſpeak agreeable to the idea which his countrymen have of the* french *muſic.* -----*This is the author's note.*

I not us'd in this ſplendidly-kind manner, purely to prevent my dying with grief and anxiety? I am undoubtedly kept alive, purpoſely to be offer'd up in ſacrifice, to the god who is worſhipped by the inhabitants of the country. But if this be ſo, How was it poſſible for the young men that ſat at table with me, and who in all probability are captives as well as my ſelf, to appear ſo gay and unconcern'd? If I am only to be a ſlave, does the treatment I have hitherto met with wear the face of captivity? None of thoſe who are in the ſame circumſtances with my ſelf, have in any manner a ſervile air. Where am I, what am I, what ſhall I do? Alas! they poſſibly deſign to force me to change my religion, but I will ſuffer ten thouſand deaths, ſooner than conſent to it.

Theſe uneaſy thoughts kept me from ſleeping for ſome time; however I at laſt clos'd my eyes and fell into a ſound ſleep. The next day 'twas a pain to me to wake; the longeſt ſlumbers are always too fleeting for the wretched.

CHAP. III.

The author soon learns the Babilarian *tongue, by a new and uncommon method. His conversation with the director of the seraglio, who informs him that the posts and employments of the state are fill'd by women. The origin of this custom.*

Zadernein came to me a little after I was got up, and finding me very uneasy, he was extremely kind, and gave me to understand that I had no reason to despond. A moment after, a man came into the room, who taught the language of the country to foreigners by a most surprizing method, without the assistance of a regular Grammar. He was a painter in miniature, who drew wonderfully fine, and had collected in two large volumes, the representations of all natural objects, which he himself had painted, and afterwards got engrav'd. His whole art lay in immediately presenting

ſenting to a ſcholar, the pictures of the moſt common and ordinary things: whenever he ſhew'd him a print, he told him the name by which it was call'd in the *Balibarian* tongue, and made him write it underneath, in the character which was peculiar to him; ſo that his draughts taken together, made a kind of dictionary, that was vaſtly uſeful to his pupils.

Among us, the only method of learning foreign languages, is by joining the idea of a word, whoſe ſignification we would remember, with the idea of another word that is familiar to us; ſo that we retain one found by the medium of another. Now all that comes into the mind by the organ of ſight, imprints it ſelf much ſtronger than whatever enters it by the medium of the other ſenſes, as experience plainly ſhews. Hence I conclude, that this gramatic-painter's method was excellent, and that it ought to be us'd in our univerſities, for the inſtructing of our youth in greek and latin. The only reaſon why children learn to tattle ſo ſoon

from

from their nurſes, is becauſe they ſee and look attentively upon every thing they hear ſpoke. However, I am perſuaded that this new ſyſtem of grammer will not meet with better reception, than the new methods which are daily invented in *Europe* for ſhortning the way to ſcience, which in reality, add but very little to the number of learned men.

I ſpent a fortnight in learning all the noun ſubſtantives of the *Babilarian* tongue; at the ſame time I alſo learnt the adjectives, becauſe there was no print but repreſented the Thing with a variety of attributes. Several of theſe prints were illuminated, otherwiſe it would have been impoſſible for me to learn the names of the ſeveral colours.

With regard to thoſe verbs which expreſs an action of the ſoul or body, my maſter finding I had a very good memory, and had already learnt the nouns, gave me the ſecond volume of his collections, comprehending the verbs; that is, pictures or repreſentations of the different actions and paſſions.

ons. The nouns in that language are indeclinable, and the verbs are not conjugated, wherein it bears a great affinity to the engliſh; which in that particular, boaſts a greater perfection than moſt other languages, they being clogg'd with uſeleſs difficulties. Neither has it, any more than ours, nouns maſculine or feminine to expreſs inanimate Beings, which I always look'd upon as vaſtly abſurd. To inſtance in an example or two, why is *enſis* in latin which ſignifies a ſword, of the maſculine gender; and *vagina*, that is a ſcabbard, of the feminine. Are the ſword and ſcabbard of a different ſex? I could add ſeveral other obſervations on this head, were ſuch enquiries proper for a mariner.

Moſt of the prints which were to expreſs the verbs, were pretty much complex'd? but then I never ſaw any thing ſo beautifully deſign'd in my life, particularly when they expreſs'd any impulſe of the ſoul, ſuch as hatred, deſire, fear, hope, eſteem, reſpect, contempt, anger, ſubmiſſion; and the virtues,

virtues, ſuch as chaſtity, obedience, fidelity; or the vices, as knavery, avarice, pride, cruelty, &c.

As we expreſs theſe things by metaphorical terms, which are analogous to the motions and modifications of the body; 'tis plain that nothing is eaſier than to deſcribe all this to the eye in painting. Adverbs, which are of uſe in heightning or leſs'ning the force of verbs, and to expreſs a gradation in our ideas, were alſo painted; ſo that at the ſame time I was taught the verbs by the expreſſions of the ſeveral actions deſcrib'd in painting, I alſo learnt the adverbs by the repreſentation of the mode of thoſe actions. As for inſtance, the various degrees of love were expreſs'd in ſo many different pictures, to which a common term or word correſponded; with the addition of another term to expreſs the ſeveral degrees of the paſſion, and this was what form'd the adverb.

Zindernein uſed to viſit me every day, and was greatly pleas'd with the progreſs I made in the *Babilarian* language; and

and indeed in about a month's time, I was able to converſe with him. Sometimes I cou'd not hit upon the proper expreſſion; but then, as he underſtood what I meant, he would immediately recall it to my memory. Beſides, the inhabitants ſpeak very ſlow, ſo that a man has time to recollect the words as he ſpeaks: and as 'tis a ſoft language, the pronounciation is very eaſy. With regard to the accent, I learnt it by degrees. The reaſon why I got the *Babilarian* tongue ſo ſoon, was, becauſe I confin'd my ſelf cloſe to it for two months, and convers'd with no body but my maſter and *Zindernein*. By application we adorn and embelliſh the mind, and improve in every kind of knowledge.

In my firſt converſation with *Zindernein*, I ask'd him why ſo much civility had been paid me? what were the motives of the kind uſage I met with? what place that was in which I liv'd, and what they intended to do with me? He made no ſcruple to ſatisfy my curioſity, by telling me, that I was in the

queen's

queen's ſeraglio, in which there were about a dozen young foreigners, like my ſelf whom ſhe lov'd; and had educated, merely to adminiſter to her pleaſures. The men of this iſland, ſays he, are not worthy of her majeſty, who would think ſhe ſullied the majeſty of her diadem, were ſhe to ſtoop ſo low as to beſtow her affection on a ſubject; and that it would even be dangerous, in a political view, were ſhe to do them ſo great an honour; becauſe the families of the iſland, out of which ſhe might make choice of husbands, would poſſibly take advantage of the grandeur to which it would raiſe them. What! ſays I to him, am I then intended to be given in marriage to the queen? Yes, ſays he, in caſe ſhe approves of your perſon and underſtanding. But all the young men here are your rivals. Surely, ſays I, this is very unaccountable in a queen; is it poſſible for the modeſty of a woman to go ſuch lengths, as to marry a dozen husbands?

She never has but one at a time, replied *Ziudernein*; but then ſhe is at liber-

ty

ty to change him every year, in caſe ſhe thinks proper. On this occaſion ſhe takes him, among the young men, ſhe loves beſt out of the ſeraglio, in order to raiſe him to that honour; and then ſhe ſends back the husband ſhe quits into the ſame ſeraglio, and marries him again afterwards if ſhe pleaſes. Her preſent husband has liv'd ten months with her, ſo that his time is near expir'd, and 'tis thought he won't be continued.

There is in this palace a young man of great beauty and merit, who, 'tis generally thought, will ſucceed him. Poſſibly it may one day be your lot, and you may be ſo happy as to pleaſe her majeſty. Who knows but ſhe may prefer you to that young man, who is deſign'd to fill her auguſt arms?

Such an honour, ſays I, would be delightful, were it of long duration; and were I to be a king upon marrying her majeſty. That can never be, ſays *Zindernein*, the law being expreſs to the contrary. What! ſays I, is there a law in this iſland which excludes

males

males from the throne, and ſuffers none but women to aſcend it? 'Tis not ſo with us. 'Tis true indeed, that the ſcepter is now in a * female hand, but that, was only by accident, and becauſe the majority of the people thought her next heir to the crown. After her deceaſe, we ſhall have a king, which is much more natural in every reſpect; we thinking it mean to ſubmit our ſelves to a woman. The male ſex, is the ſuperior, and 'tis their buſineſs to command. Thus, ſays he, ſhould it be in this iſland, and 'twas ſo formerly; but the manners of the inhabitants are quite chang'd, and the reins are held by women. They fill up all poſts and employments both civil and military; our ſea and land forces are compos'd of them only; in ſhort, the men among us act the part of the women in your country.

What! ſays I to him, are not you then who preſide here, and ſuperintend the

* *Queen* Anne *was ſuppoſ'd to reign when the author writes.*

the prizes, a man? Are those who took us prisoners, women? Yes, says he, your vessel was taken by females. They are dress'd like men, except that their gowns descend but to the calf of the leg; whereas those of the men are much longer and wider. I am indeed a man, and the only one that has any thing to do in the administration, none but a man being allow'd to execute my office.

I then felt a kind of shame and confusion, when I found that I had been taken prisoner by women, tho' I was arm'd, and cou'd not forbear blushing. *Zindernein* perceiving it, told me, that such women of the island as devoted themselves to a military life, were very brave and well disciplin'd; were furious in battle, and that the men could hardly make head against them. Besides, says he, they are very vigorous: as they are train'd up very young in all bodily exercises, and learn to ride, and fence; as they often go a hunting, and drink strong liquors, they become more strong and robust than the male inhabitants of this country, whom decorum will not permit to

imitate the women in thoſe particulars. However, ſays he, this was not always the cuſtom; and I'll acquaint you with the riſe of it, in caſe you have any curioſity that way. I entreated him to gratify it, when he began as follows.

About ſeven thouſand two hundred moons ſince, *Ameneininus* was ſovereign of this iſland. In his reign, men began to have a prodigious value for women, inſomuch that the female reign ſeem'd already come. The king, and in imitation of the pattern he ſet them, all the men of the iſland, neglecting their moſt important affairs, apply'd themſelves no more to the ſtudy of the laws or politicks; diſdain'd glory; fled from war; never adminiſtred juſtice; deſpis'd knowledge, and all the polite arts; were ignorant of hiſtory and philoſophy; abhorr'd labour of every kind; were regardleſs of honour, and dead to emulation, and, in a word, were eternally ſighing at the feet of an enchanting ſex. Now the women who are naturally ambitious, reſolv'd to take advantage

vantage of this ſcandalous effeminacy of the men, in order to ſhake off the yoke, which the wiſdom of antient times had laid on their ſhoulders; a yoke which the weakneſs of the prevailing ſex had ſince made too eaſy. They ſucceeded too well in this fatal attempt; and the charms of queen *Aiginu*, being neglected by her royal conſort, ſhe began the black crime. Accordingly ſhe ſtep'd into the throne, and threw from it, a weak, indolent monarch, who was immers'd in pleaſure, and the ſlave of a multitude of miſtreſſes.

The conſpiracy which the women had form'd, broke out at the ſame juncture: having gain'd a ſuperiority over their husbands, they not only undertook to manage all domeſtic affairs, which theſe had entirely abandon'd; but alſo thoſe of the adminiſtration of all publick affairs; of politicks, the revenues, war, and juſtice which was now wholly diſregarded. However, at firſt they did not dare to uſurp openly the rights and privileges of the other ſex, but contented themſelves

with managing every thing in their name. Had they then carried their machinations farther, the men might poſſibly have rouz'd from their lethargy; or at leaſt have diſputed for abſolute power with the females, ſince both nature and reaſon have given them that prerogative. But the women, who are naturally artful and of a moſt ſubtil caſt of mind, took a quite different courſe; they flatter'd their husbands, and ſeduc'd their lovers; ſo that at laſt, their charms having gain'd a very great aſcendent, they began to prepare the fatal revolution.

The male world ſubmitted inſenſibly to the laws of the other ſex. As theſe manag'd the adminiſtration tolerably well, and did not ſuffer the State to be in as much confuſion as before, no one repin'd. In proceſs of time 'twas imagin'd, that ſince they held the reins ſo ſteadily, they certainly were born to empire. In the mean time, the men immers'd themſelves ſtill more and more in ſloth; and their indolence increas'd in proportion as it was fomented

by

by inactivity. 'Twas then, as we are told, that a ſurprizing comet blaz'd in the ſky, the tail whereof ſeem'd to be eclips'd; a circumſtance which the female aſtrologers did not fail to interpret in their own favour.

King *Amencinimus* dying, *Aiginu* put to death ſuch of her husbands relations as might have diſputed the crown with her, or have ruin'd her ſchemes; and, 'tis ſuppos'd, that her ſon fell a ſacrifice to her horrid ambition. A few old men, who were grown uneaſy, after weighing every thing ſeriouſly, attempted to revive the antient cuſtoms, and reſtore the male ſpecies to their original rights and privileges; but theſe were baniſh'd by an act of parliament, compos'd of the moſt diſtinguiſh'd females of the iſland. Some other old men, who poſſibly might have attempted to rebel, were ſo intimidated at the example which was made of the former; that reflecting on their advanc'd age and inability to fight, they thought proper to lie ſtill. The reſt, after having trifled away life at the ſett

of their miſtreſſes, were afraid to take up arms againſt them; and ended their days under a tyranny, to which they had voluntarily ſubmitted in their youth. As to the young men who were born in ſlavery, they never once thought of freeing themſelves.

While *Zindernein* was giving me this account, I reflected that the male part of the *Europeans*, conſidering their preſent way of life, might one day be ſubject to ſome ſuch revolution as that I have been ſpeaking of. Their ignorance and effeminacy, have long pav'd the way to it, if the female world have but the art of making a proper advantage of it.

Nevertheleſs, continued *Zindernein*, the inhabitants of the northern part of this great iſland, which then was a kingdom apart and independant from ours; fearing leſt the infection ſhould reach them, and their wives ſhould form ſuch another conſpiracy, ſent emiſſaries ſecretly into our provinces. Theſe endeavour'd to ſpirit up the men to rebel, and to aboliſh the new empire.

Accordingly

Accordingly twenty thouſand men having broke out into actual rebellion, they requir'd her majeſty to ſummon a male-parliament, and elect a king; and in caſe of refuſal, threatned to chuſe one themſelves. Their propoſal was haughtily rejected by the queen, who threatned to make the rebels feel the effects of her power, in caſe they did not immediately lay down their arms. Immediately ſhe rais'd a body of fifty thouſand women, in order to reduce the rebels. The moſt ſcandalous circumſtance is, that three thouſand faint-hearted young fellows, ſuffer'd themſelves to be incorporated among the female regiments. The army was commanded by the queen in perſon, who had under her twelve ſhe-lieutenant-generals, twelve female-major-generals, thirty ſix ſhe-brigadiers, and fourty eight colonels of that ſex.

The two armies met in the plains of *Camaraca*. The males were arm'd with bows and arrows, and their cavalry was very well mounted. The queen, juſtly ſuppos'd that as her for-

ces were undiſciplin'd, nor had ever ſeen a battle, they conſequently would ſcarce be able to make head againſt an army of men, and therefore employ'd a ſtratagem highly worthy her genius. She ſet at the head of her army, which was now drawn up in battle array, four thouſand very beautiful young women. Their hair fell in treſſes on their naked ſhoulders; their ſnowy breaſts were uncover'd, as alſo their legs and their arms. Theſe were their only weapons; and 'twas in this dangerous and formidable condition, they appear'd before the oppoſite army, whoſe fury died away at the ſight: accordingly they threw down their arms, and they who juſt before were the moſt formidable enemies, now became the tendereſt lovers and moſt cringing ſlaves.

Others relate this incident in a different manner, and ſay, that the queen having thought proper to treat with the rebels, ſent twenty exquiſitely beautiful females into their camp, who immediately captivated the hearts of all the conſpirators; and that afterwards fomenting

fomenting a ſpirit of diſcord among the leaders, the male army broke up. This has ſo much the greater air of probability, as women are well known to have a moſt admirable knack at ſetting men together by the ears.

Be this as it will, the women gain'd as much advantage by this pacific victory, as they could have promis'd themſelves from the moſt bloody battle, tho' they had had the glory to cut the male army to pieces. From that period their authority has always increas'd. We, for our parts, are excluded all the poſts and employments of ſtate: 'tis they alone profeſs the ſciences, and none but themſelves are allow'd to cultivate them: nay, to ſo ridiculous a a pitch is this carried, that any man who ſhould pretend to ſet up for a ſcholar, would be laugh'd at by every body, and be ſent back to his diſtaff and needle. In fine, they only preſide over the altars, and the myſteries of religion; and 'tis they offer ſolemn ſacrifices to the Gods in our temples, and are at the head of all our religious ceremonies.

As

As for my own part, ſays he, who have the misfortune to be of the male ſpecies; and who nevertheleſs would have reaſon to thank nature for it, were I born under another climate; I ſecretly deplore that ſhameful ſubverſion of the order which nature had eſtabliſh'd; and will never ſubſcribe in my heart, to that falſe maxim, which is taught by all our ſhe-pedants, that the female ſpecies is the moſt perfect throughout the whole animal creation. This, in my opinion, is a new and erroneous doctrine, that claſhes with antient tradition, and may be confuted by unanſwerable arguments. 'Tis true indeed, that females only are able to bring forth their like; and that all animated ſubſtances iſſue immediately from theirs. But then, is it poſſible for them to produce the effect of this admirable power, which indeed is a noble prerogative, without the aſſiſtance of the male ſpecies? 'Tis to no purpoſe to ſay, that the principle of fertility is inherent in them; and that the action of the males only prepares and modifies

difies it, like the dew of the ſpring, which deſcending into the bowels of the earth, unfolds the infant bud, and calls forth the plants from it. I, for my own part, aſſert that every thing is perform'd by the males; that the primitive bud is inherent in them, and that females are directly, with regard to them, what the earth is with reſpect to an induſtrious hand that cultivates it. This was the opinion of the learned part of our male anceſtors, whoſe books, whence we might have borrow'd numberleſs arguments to confute their pretenſions, the women have burnt. Nevertheleſs, no one dares in this age to maintain this opinion publickly, upon pain of paſſing for a dangerous innovator, and a factious perſon.

Such, dear *Gulliver*, is the country you now inhabit. If you can extinguiſh that pride, which the excellence of your ſex inſpires you with, and eradicate the juſt prejudices of education, you then will be happy. As you are very handſome, all the women in general will treat you with reſpect; and flatter

and,

and ogle you in ſuch a manner, as will ſufficiently ſooth your vanity. For notwithſtanding that the women look upon our ſex as inferiour to theirs, they nevertheleſs have the utmoſt regard for us: they treat us reſpectfully; give us the precedency upon all occaſions, and dare not let drop one diſobliging expreſſion; and were a woman to uſe us with the leaſt uncivility, ſhe would be thought frantic, and quite loſe her reputation. This is a precious remainder of our antient cuſtoms; a natural right which female pride has not been able to aboliſh; and an antient title, we ſtill preſerve againſt them. However, they pretend that the ſole reaſon why they treat us ſo tenderly, is from the conſideration of our weakneſs, which, ſay they, claims the moſt gentle uſage. Alas! this complacency is now degenerated to an empty honour. Women, when we love them, call us their maſters, and yet we are for ever their ſlaves.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Sequel of the diſcourſe between the author and the director of the ſeraglio. Manners of the women and men of the iſland of Babilary. *Deſcription of the ſeraglio, and of thoſe who were confin'd in it with the author; their employments, jealouſies,* &c.

I liſtned attentively to this diſcourſe, which ſurpriz'd me very much. While *Zindernein* was talking to me, I ſometimes cou'd hardly forbear burſting out a laughing; but I check'd my ſelf as much as I cou'd, becauſe I obſerv'd, that it always made him more ſerious, and ſeem'd to throw him into ſome confuſion. When he had done ſpeaking, I told him with an air of gayety and freedom, that ſince the fair-ſex had the ſuperiority in that iſland, I would conform to cuſtom; and endeavour to compenſate for the loſs of the rank which nature had given me, by the ſoft and eaſy enjoyment of thoſe

pleaſures

pleaſures which now offer'd themſelves.

In caſe, ſays he, you have the honour to marry the queen, you then will be remov'd out of this ſeraglio, and be allow'd to range up and down her majeſty's palace, where you'll be ſurrounded with a numberleſs multitude of officers of both ſexes. But be ſure you take care not to give a looſe to criminal deſires, or fall in love with any woman. If you diſcover the leaſt frailty, you'll be deſpis'd by the whole nation: it being an eſtabliſh'd maxim, that modeſty, which is here look'd upon as an inconſiderable quality in the female ſex, is an eſſential virtue in ours. A man who keeps miſtreſſes, and devotes himſelf entirely to them, loſes his reputation, when his irregularities are once made public, which it is ſcarce poſſible to prevent, becauſe the women of this country are ſurprizingly indiſcreet; and are often prompted by vanity, to blaze abroad the favours they are indulg'd. The queen's conſort is particularly oblig'd to be vaſtly upon his

his guard, and to take care that his conduct be irreproachable. He must not only be chaſt, but must not even be ſuſpected of incontinency.

Are all the courtiers, ſays I, very modeſt? yes, ſays *Zindernein*; however many of them are not always what they affect to appear, and the greateſt part are ſuſpected to have miſtreſſes. 'Tis the glory of women to ſubdue the hearts of men, and that of men to defend them. They themſelves would be pardon'd in every thing, tho' they pretend to be leſs frail than men, whom at the ſame time, they won't excuſe in one ſingle particular. However, when a man careſſes one woman only, the public is ſo indulgent as to excuſe him: but in caſe he devotes himſelf to ſeveral, and that his ſhame is once ſpread abroad, his wife, who is dishonour'd after a moſt ridiculous manner, generally divorces him from her. Sometimes indeed, ſhe winks at her husband's intrigues, and is prudently ſilent. Beſides, 'tis not very eaſy to comprehend

hend on this occaſion, what is wanting to a man's honour.

Our women, ſays he, rail very much at the other ſex, who yet are not much offended, provided they don't fall upon their perſons, or their parts, whoſe reputation they value infinitely more than they do their virtue. They look upon the art of pleaſing the women, as the nobleſt quality; and that of engaging their reſpect the loweſt.

I then ask'd him, in what manner marriages were carried on in this iſland. There is no circumſtance, ſays he, in the world, that is conducted and concluded with ſo much caution, and ſo little prudence as this. We have ſeveral ſuperannuated old fellows, who are marriage-brokers, and employ themſelves wholly in pairing the youths of both ſexes. Nothing is hardly ever conſider'd, but the outſide of a young fellow, his birth, his eſtate, and his perſon; as for his temper, that is never enquir'd into, till after the indiſſoluble knot is tied. 'Tis true indeed, that the women have the convenience of repudiating

ting their husbands, for which reaſon they have no occaſion to be ſo very ſcrupulous, with regard to a ſimilitude of inclinations: but as the male part are denied this privilege, 'tis ſurprizing ſo many of them ſhould be negligent, in an article of ſuch great importance to married people.

After I underſtood a little of the *Babilarian* tongue, I was allow'd the liberty to ſee all my companions of the ſeraglio, and to amuſe myſelf with them. They generally went to bed and roſe late, and ſpent part of the day in dreſſing, and going to muſic-houſes and theatres, whither the queen often reſorted with her whole court. There was not the leaſt friendſhip between theſe young men, becauſe they all aſpir'd to the ſame honour, and each fancied he deſerv'd it, preferable to the reſt of his rivals. They were for ever blackning one another's reputation, and were particularly zealous to depreciate that man, who was look'd upon as the greateſt beauty; and was generally ſup-

 poſ'd

pos'd would be pitch'd upon by the queen for her consort.

This happy rival was call'd *Sirilu*. One of them told me he had a most insipid air, and that his eyes had too great a languish: another affirm'd he was a stupid creature: a third assur'd that the queen wou'd not like him, and wou'd hardly keep him a week. If at any time I applauded one of the Band, the rest wou'd say he was an aukward fellow; that he had very disagreeable eyes, and was horridly ill-natur'd. In short, tho' they us'd one another very handsomely in outward shew, they yet bore a mortal aversion to one another. As I was thought to be a very pretty young fellow, the reader may suppose, I too had my share of censure.

Their conversation was vastly insipid, except when it turn'd upon scandal. They would frequently discourse of their dress, and the disposition of their attire. Sometimes they wou'd argue, but then the topic which they usually debated upon, was to enquire, whether

ther it were more graceful, to let the hair deſcend in ringlets upon the ſhoulders, or to tie it up in a ribbon; whether an artificial red ſpread upon the cheeks, did not heighten their beauty; and if the colour with which nature paints the face, is not more faint than thoſe which art has invented; whether a complexion that inclines to brown is not more lovely in the eyes of women, than a complexion that has too much of the lilly and roſe in it. Each of them pronounc'd upon theſe important particulars, as the looking-glaſs directed.

A great number of the women of the ſeraglio, waited upon thoſe who were confin'd in it; and were commanded not to admit any other women into it, upon pain of death, unleſs brought by the queen, who us'd to viſit it ſometimes. Theſe female-goalers of ours were all frightfully ugly, and, as I was afterwards inform'd, incapable of the ſocial embrace. They all had different employments in the ſeraglio; and ſhe who preſided over the reſt, was call'd the *Great Maramouk*. She

and all her ſubalterns, were ſubordinate to *Zindernein*, who was ſuper-intendant-general of all her majeſty's pleaſures, and grand purveyor of her ſeraglio; an employment to which that of comptroler of the prizes taken at ſea, was annex'd. When the reader conſiders the manners and cuſtoms of theſe females, he will be of opinion, that this employment was more ſuited to a man, than to one of their own ſex.

CHAP. V.

The queen viſits the ſeraglio. The author is preſented to her; has the good fortune to pleaſe her. He is nominated and declared the queen's husband for the enſuing year. He leaves the ſeraglio and reſides in the palace.

WHen *Zindernein* thought I underſtood the tongue ſo well, as to be able to diſcourſe with the queen; and obſerv'd I had contracted a certain air, which all the men, who are deſirous of inſinuating themſelves into the

the favour of the ladies, ſtudy to acquire; he bid me prepare to ſee her majeſty, who, he ſaid, wou'd viſit the ſeraglio on the morrow. He bid me be ſure not to be over forward in diſcourſe when the queen was preſent; to aſſume a plain, unaffectected air; to ſoften my glances with the greateſt modeſty and reſerve; to let every geſture be ſtudied; to put on at the ſame time a calm and ſerene countenance; and ſometimes to ogle her majeſty in the moſt lively, the moſt tender, and reſpectful manner. I promis'd to obſerve his inſtructions, and began to prepare my ſelf for the honour I was to receive the next day.

That day I was dreſs'd more ſplendidly than uſual. I ſhone in jewels, and was cloath'd in a moſt magnificent habit. I had been order'd to bathe in ſcented waters; and *Zindernein* gave me a wonderful liquor to drink, that gives a clearneſs to the skin, and makes it look agreeably plump; and a moiſt and ſparkling caſt to the eye. When my companions

beheld my beauty lighted up in this manner, they could not forbear discovering their envy.

Sirilu was apprehensive I should suspend his glory and happiness. Thro' a certain faint red, with which he always artfully conceal'd his natural, wan complexion, I cou'd perceive he grew pale as he look'd at me. The women of the seraglio, said I was of a more advantageous stature; that my leg was more finely shap'd, and my hair more graceful; that the turn of my face was more agreable, my eyes larger, my mouth smaller, and my features more delicate. However, *Sirilu* was finely shap'd, and very handsome; but then he had a melancholy air, and a most senseless countenance.

Her majesty came to the seraglio in the evening, and *Zindernein* presented me to her in private; telling her at the same time, that I was the young foreigner he had frequently mention'd to her, who was on board the last vessel that was taken. The queen was of a majestic stature; her gracious and noble

noble aſpect, correſponded to her exalted dignity; ſhe, like moſt of the women of that country, had what we *Europeans* call a maſculine beauty, but which goes by another name in that iſland, becauſe all its male inhabitants have an effeminate air.

She made me ſit down by her, and the firſt queſtion ſhe ask'd me, was, what country I was born in. Having told her I was an *European*, and born in an iſland call'd *Great Britain*; ſhe ſaid, matters ſhould be ſo ordered, that I wou'd no longer think of my country. I replied, I had already begun to forget its manners and cuſtoms, and reſolv'd to follow thoſe intirely of the country into which providence had caſt me. Our cuſtoms, ſays ſhe, muſt certainly appear very odd to you, ſince you have been educated in quite oppoſite maxims; however, you'll quickly find you have gain'd by the change. In your country, women are more happy than men, in ours 'tis the very reverſe. Your whole life is one continual round of pleaſure, and

it is ſpent in an agreeable viciſſitude of amuſements; your days are unruffled by cares or diſquietudes of any kind. Your dependance is purely ſpecious and imaginary, 'tis we in reality are dependant on you; our whole concern is to pleaſe you; 'tis you gather all the fruit of our labours, and we live only to make you happy. Enjoy, ſays ſhe, therefore and reliſh a happineſs, which you may depend upon as long as you live in this iſland; and conſent to promote my felicity, which hereafter may poſſibly increaſe your own. But, you bluſh! how am I charm'd with your modeſty! One would really think you were a native of this iſland, and yet you was born in *Great Britain*. You certainly muſt have been king of that country; for a man who boaſts ſo many perfections, ought to command over the reſt of his fellow-creatures. You have nothing of that immodeſty I have obſerv'd in foreigners; you ſeem to have liv'd ſeveral years among us, and yet you have been but three months in my kingdom.

Not-

Notwithſtanding I was prepar'd to talk as rationally as I poſſibly cou'd to the queen, I muſt confeſs my wit and ſenſe forſook me at this juncture; the modeſty which had been ſo ſtrongly inculcated to me, together with my ſurprize, ſtruck me quite dumb. I am certain there's no woman of faſhion in *Europe*, but wou'd be in ſome confuſion, were a mighty monarch to addreſs her in the ſame manner. Being a man and an *European*, it was impoſſible for me to anſwer the overtures of an auguſt queen, whoſe majeſtic air fill'd me with awe; at the ſame time that her indecent diſcourſe ſhock'd the prejudices I had imbib'd: for her majeſty did not only ſay a thouſand obliging things which affected my modeſty, but was laviſh of the moſt tender, the moſt melting expreſſions; but then, as I diſcover'd little gayety, I appear'd reſerv'd and judicious: I knew when to caſt my eyes to the ground; when to raiſe, or turn them on one ſide; when to ſmile, recline my head, or bluſh; in ſhort, the queen

was extremely pleas'd both with my perſon and behaviour, tho' I had ſhewn but little wit. Poſſibly ſhe might agree in taſte with ſeveral men in *Europe*, who don't value whether a woman has any at all, provided ſhe is modeſt, beautiful, and has ſome little glimmerings of good ſenſe. She kiſs'd me with a moſt graceful air, and her kiſs ſeem'd more amorous than polite.

After her majeſty was gone, *Zindernein* ſaid ſhe was very well pleas'd with me, and told him, I had given her more ſatisfaction than any of the young men in the ſeraglio. If, ſays he, the queen keeps in the ſame mind, and your own behaviour does not check your good fortune, ſhe very probably will marry you firſt; and as ſhe's prodigiouſly ſmit with your perſon, you poſſibly may enjoy the honour of her bed for ſeveral years.

As the princeſs at her leaving the ſeraglio, was continually mentioning me to the Ladies and even Lords of the court; a report was ſoon ſpread, that ſhe was deeply in love with me.

From

From that minute I was abhorr'd, and my character tore to pieces by all my companions. *Sirilu* was inconſolable at the news; the melancholy which was natural to him, chang'd to the blackeſt vapours: he loſt his ſtomach; ſleep fled his eyes; he neglected his dreſs, and took no further care of his beauty. He grew daily more pale and meager; the glory to which I was rais'd, having quite disfigur'd the lovelineſs of his features. The reſt, who were equally diſtanc'd by my promotion, being ſenſible that in the preſent affair, ſeniority in the ſeraglio was no title to acquire the honour which was deſign'd me; cou'd not yet look upon the preference I was ſhewn, as a peculiar prerogative; but were reduc'd to the ſad conſolation which patience adminiſters in all the reverſes of fortune.

However, *Zindernein* having inform'd the queen, of the ſtate of her ſeraglio ſince her laſt viſit, order'd him to tell all my companions not to deſpond; that ſhe wou'd think of their Intereſt, and wou'd make them all happy in their

their turns, but that they must wait; a way of expression very familiar to grandeur.

However, as her majesty was not willing the seraglio shou'd languish in a cruel uncertainty, she thought proper to fix her choice. Hereupon I was nominated the queen's consort, for the year 1716, with the usual formalities. Publick rejoycings were made upon this account; and being remov'd out of the seraglio into her majesty's palace, I receiv'd the compliments of the whole court, and the several corporations of the kingdom, upon that occasion.

I spent, pursuant to custom, a fortnight in the palace, before the marriage was to be solemniz'd. Sometimes I us'd to divert my self in the calash attended with *Zindernein*, and certain lords and ladies of the court, whom I made choice of, when I visited all the country houses in the neighbourhood. I had a drawing-room, where the *Payatis*, or greatest lords of the kingdom us'd to wait upon me, and had the privilege

vilege of ſitting on a ſtool in my preſence. All royal honours were paid me, tho' I was not yet king, becauſe I was appointed to marry a queen; and ſhould perhaps have given one to the State, had heav'n acquieſc'd with the wiſhes of the people.

CHAP. VI.

The learning of the women of Babilary. *Tribunals or courts compos'd of men. Different religion of the ſexes. Manner how women adminiſter juſtice, manage the revenues, and carry on Trade. Different academies.*

AS I at firſt gratified abundantly my curioſity, I ſhall relate in few words all the ſingularities I obſerv'd in the cuſtoms of the iſland of *Babilary*. Being one day in the Playhouſe with *Zindernein*, I ſaw ſeven ladies, who had a very witty aſpect, ſeated on a diſtinguiſh'd bench. As we were coming out, I ask'd my conductor who thoſe ſeven perſons were; he

he told me, they form'd a literary tribunal, whom the queen had lately eſtabliſh'd to paſs ſentence, in a ſovereign manner, on all dramatic pieces. Before, ſays he, this tribunal was erected, the public were peſter'd with a numberleſs multitude of ſtupid plays, which a ſett of inſipid writers had the aſſurance to preſent to them, under the glorious auſpices of actors and actreſſes, without once conſulting perſons of a refin'd and judicious taſte, and well vers'd in the laws of the *Drama*. But ſince the time that all dramatic poets, are, by a new ſtatute, oblig'd to obtain the approbation of this learn'd and ingenious tribunal, before their plays are brought on the ſtage; there is not one damn'd, but all are applauded according to their merit; and the public are no longer impos'd upon, during the firſt repreſentations of a play.

Such a tribunal, ſays I, is worthy the wiſdom of your adminiſtration. But wherefore is not ſuch another eſtabliſh'd for all books that are publiſh'd? Her majeſty,

majeſty, ſays *Zindernein*, has taken care of that alſo. Formerly, 'twas enough that an author advanc'd nothing againſt virtue or the State; but now care is taken to prevent their depraving the taſte or infecting the mind; ſo that no trifling, incoherent work, is now allow'd to be printed. For this purpoſe there has been eſtabliſh'd a body of judicious perſons, deep learn'd in the ſeveral branches of literature, who are neither fantaſtic or captious; and theſe authorize the publication of all works of wit. Since this prudent inſtitution, the public is no longer peſter'd with pieces abſolutely bad; and another very happy circumſtance, is, there are fewer new books.

Moreover, learning is indulg'd a great liberty, purpoſely to advance the progreſs of arts and ſciences. Her majeſty, in order to improve the genius and underſtanding of her ſubjects, enriches all thoſe who write any valuable pieces; by which means emulation increaſes, arts flouriſh, and excellent works are produc'd. Letters were ſurprizingly

prizingly neglected in the preceeding reign; and the laborious profession of a writer, was look'd upon as the least honourable. The queen, being robb'd and plunder'd with impunity by the *Morajats*, whose employment was to collect the revenues, thought of compensating the loss, by retrenching the several stipends with which merit had always been rewarded. In all probability, virtue and politeness would soon have taken their flight with learning, had not her present majesty wisely provided against so great an unhappiness.

I then ask'd *Zindernein*, whether the books which met with the approbation of the public, were very witty and ingenious. We, says he, set a greater value on those works which inform the judgment, than on such as are written merely to the fancy. In general, we require genius and judgment in all works; but then we † *had rather there should be*

no

† *According to the english proverb*, Rather than all be wit, let there be none.

no wit at all, than too much. Some of our moderns have introduc'd a certain epigramatic, affected ſtile, which at firſt dazled the imagination, but is now very much exploded; ſo that in this age, to hunt after wit, is the ſame as hunting after impertinence. Nevertheleſs this flat, puerile ſtile, is ſtill admir'd by ſome, who, being at variance with reaſon, have enter'd into a kind of agreement among themſelves, to perpetuate its precious ſeed. Our men are more delighted with this ſtile than the women; a ſure indication of their ficklenefs, and at the ſame time of the emptineſs of their underſtandings.

'Tis ſurprizing, ſays I to *Zindernein*, the women of your country ſhould have devoted themſelves to learning; and that a ſex, which in all parts of the world, is lazy and ignorant, and who look upon thinking as a very painful exerciſe, ſhould in your iſland be ſo learned and laborious. Knowledge, ſays he, is the child of ſelf-love, and curioſity: are we then to wonder,

that women who are here indulg'd every gratification, ſhould thirſt after ſcience, and make ſtudy a ſerious employment? The labour which learning demands is light to them, becauſe they are puff'd up by vanity, and prompted by a reſtleſs ambition. The only motive of their ſtudy, is, that they may obtain a prerogative to deſpiſe all who do not.

If women are ignorant in all other countries, as you ſay they are, the reaſon is, becauſe men, from the moſt juſt and ſolid reaſons, prohibit their application to ſuch ſciences as inflate the mind. They judiciouſly conſider, that women are too prone to vanity; and that were they to devote themſelves ſeriouſly to ſtudy, their innate curioſity would prompt them to dive too far; that their delicacy and penetration might occaſion a thouſand dangerous diſputes; that their obſtinacy would make their errors incurable; that they would have an inſatiable thirſt after knowledge; in a word, that they would loſe ſomething of that

ſprightly

ſprightly taſte which heav'n has indulg'd them, for the capital and indiſpenſable duty of their ſex; all which wou'd be of great prejudice to human nature.

The conſequence of this is found in our country. Such women as cultivate the *belles lettres* are inexpreſſibly haughty; moſt of theſe loſe themſelves in abſtracted ſpeculations; they ſometimes leave good ſenſe behind, purely for the ſake of wit and turn; they ſtart queſtions that aſtoniſh the judgment; they write huge folios on impoſſibilities, and on the properties of non-entity; and whenever they are miſtaken, they never allow themſelves to be ſo. In a word, they not only deſpiſe ſuch of their ſex, as apply themſelves to bodily exerciſes only; but go ſuch lengths, as to contemn the male world, whom one would think they conſider merely as ſo many brute animals; and that their greateſt perfection is their poſſeſſing the inferior part of the human ſoul. Whenever they marry, 'tis, as it were, againſt their inclinations, and merely in compliance with

the law, which prohibits their leading a ſingle life. Nay, ſo far have ſome of them gone, as to advance that 'tis no crime to infringe this ſtatute; in ſhort, ſome of them are ſcepticks in every thing.

Undoubtedly, ſays I, 'tis ſince the revolution, that ſeveral of your women have been ſo paſſionately fond of learning. Alas! anſwer'd *Zindernein*, the revolution would perhaps have never happen'd, had we not been peſter'd with female-pedants, long before that fatal æra.

The learning of our women, who applied themſelves to ſtudy, whilſt the minds of the men, were overſpread with a thick miſt of ignorance, is one of the chief cauſes of our fallen ſtate. The knowledge they had acquir'd, gave them a fatal ſuperiority over us. As men, in general, would never have obtain'd a preeminence over all animals, were not their minds active and induſtrious; by which they found out methods to tame the moſt ſavage and ungovernable: in like manner, the

female

female mind acquiring a ſuperiority over that of man, by the care the women took to cultivate, refine and enlarge it, eaſily triumph'd over the male ſpecies. Such was *Zindernein*'s diſcourſe, who gave me an ingenuous account of whatever he thought, concerning the manners and cuſtoms of his country.

May all my countrymen, who ſhall peruſe this genuine account I give of my adventures, dread leſt the ſame cataſtrophe which has been ſo fatal to the iſland of *Babilary*, ſhould one day happen in *Great Britain*; and may they not rely too much on the ſmall ſtock of knowledge they boaſt. But, on the other ſide, may the women not flatter themſelves, they ſhall ſo ſoon arrive at the glorious pitch to which the *Babilarian* women have attain'd; the happy averſion they bear to every kind of application and ſtudy, ſecures to the male ſpecies, for one century at leaſt, the preſervation of their natural rights, and their lawful ſuperiority over them. But ignorance now makes ſo great a progreſs among the men in *Europe*, that I would

not dare affirm, whether, after having reduc'd a conſiderable part of our neighbours under her empire, ſhe may not attempt to croſs the ſea; and add my countrymen to the number of her ſlaves. In this fatal extreme, ſhould the *Engliſh* ladies attempt to imitate the *Babilarian* women, lord have mercy upon us all!

I alſo enquir'd of *Zindernein*, whether his countrymen had not ſome tribunal, where they exercis'd a kind of juriſdiction? Yes, ſays he, they have tribunals, but of a moſt ridiculous kind, which would have been aboliſh'd long ſince, had they not humbly intreated they might ſtill ſubſiſt, as a faint ſhadow of the valuable ruins of their antient authority. There are therefore ſix tribunals, all compos'd of ſuperanuated, decripit men. The firſt is to judge exactly of the degree of white and red, which each man, according to his age and complexion, may uſe, in order to pleaſe the fair-ſex in general; with the privilege of laying a Fine on all thoſe who ſhould be too laviſh

of

of this ridiculous varniſh, the offspring of whim and folly. The ſecond court is to judge of modes; to approve the changes that are made in them, and to fix the number of days a certain colour is to reign, a ſilk of a peculiar taſte, or a certain manner of dreſs. The third is to ſettle the rank which men are to obſerve with regard to one another, and their ſeveral preeminences, of which they are ſurprizingly jealous. The fourth, which is the moſt awful, takes cognizance of their diſputes; the innocence or malignity of their raillery and back-biting, and makes them either retract or ſoften it, as the court ſhall ſee fitting. The fifth is to proſecute men advanc'd in years, who endeavour to paſs for young fellows. They are not allow'd to retrench above ten years; when they are convicted of making a greater ſtretch, they are condemn'd to wear a medal about their necks, which deſcends a little below the girdle; the year, the month, and day of the month, being written in large characters. Thoſe who out of malice, or by their

in a quite different light, and makes them appear as venial in their eyes. 'Tis but too true, says *Zindernein*, that causes will seldom be judg'd with impartiality, so long as they shall come under the cognizance of human tribunals. Would to heav'n that *OSSOKIA* would himself determine all disputes, which arise too often among mortals! 'Tis in vain for such of our women as have the administration in their hands, to affirm, that they are upon earth the lively images of their goddess *OSSOK*: if this be true, *OSSOK*, whom they tell us made them such, has very little genius for painting.

There are also, says he, in this island female courts, whose office is to maintain the public privileges, and superintend the management of the revenues. Never was a reign more gentle, more prudent, and more impartial, than that of our august queen, ever since she herself has presided at the helm. Assisted only by the counsels of her nurse, whose zeal and disinterestedness

are univerſally applauded, ſhe employs all her endeavours to reſtore trade to its former life and vigour, and to make her people happy. Her ſubjects hope her wiſdom will confound the pride of a numberleſs multitude of *Marajats*, who have preſum'd to rival her in the magnificence of their palaces; and that at leaſt her political equity, will clip their wings in ſuch a manner, as to prevent their being quite ſo rich as the princeſſes of the blood. For we have ſeen *Marajats*, born from among the dregs of the people; diſſolute and dead to honour, amaſſing immenſe riches by advancing money at an exorbitant diſcount, have eclips'd the magnificence of the moſt illuſtrious ladies; appropriated to themſelves the moſt exalted dignities and the fineſt eſtates; and had even the odious ambition to become the ſtem of a poſterity of *Paratis*.

The only tax, ſays he, that now ſubſiſts in the ſtate, is a general poll-tax, proportion'd to the ſubſtance of every individual, which produces a great ſum of money, without draining the ſubject.

ſatyrical Diſcourſes, add to the years of other men, are ſentenc'd never to paint their faces with red, and to appear with their naked faces the reſt of their lives. The ſixth is to puniſh ſuch as neglect the worſhip of the god *OSSOKIA*.

What god is this, ſays I to *Zinderneim*, is he worſhipp'd only in your iſland? He is the god of the men, as *OSSOK* is the goddeſs of women; an imaginary goddeſs and unknown on the earth, till the women uſurp'd the whole authority of this kingdom.

Formerly, worſhip was paid to *OSSOKIA* only, he not being known to have a wife. But our females took it into their heads to marry him to a goddeſs, who, according to their modern opinion, is vaſtly ſuperior to him; as if their pretended goddeſs cou'd have triumph'd over the preeminence of a god, as eaſily as they have over ours. Amazing blindneſs! frail and imperfect man, has ſuffer'd himſelf to be vanquiſh'd by woman: but *OSSOKIA*, who is perfect, and able to overturn

both

both heaven and earth, is too powerful and intelligent to ſubmit to a female reign.

Such, ſays I, is the corruption of the human mind, which often forms to itſelf a ſyſtem of religion, agreable to its intereſt and prejudices. But ſince you have taken notice of your male courts, give me ſome account of your female tribunals; and inform me in what manner women adminiſter juſtice in this country. With great judgment and impartiality, replied *Zindernein*, if we except that ſome old women, who have an inſatiable thirſt after *Simao*, or gold, ſometimes permit a quantity of it to be thrown into their ſcale; and that the young judges ſeem ſometimes to favour our juvenile, handſome councellours, more than the old and ugly. This abuſe, ſays I, muſt not be aſcribed to the ſex your judges are of. In countries where your maxims don't prevail, we meet with judges who are no leſs ſuſpected of thoſe petty prevarications, which the dazling ſplendor of *Simao* and of beauty, ſets

in

ject. Under the preceeding reigns, twenty thousand *Manajats*, upon pretence of raising the subsidies of the crown, us'd to plunder the people, and did not bring one third part of it into the royal coffers. By a new and prudent regulation, those women who preside over the mysteries of *OSSOK* in every city, receive all her majesty's revenues. Hereby, a just and faithful payment of the lawful tributes, is become a kind of religious virtue; because those ministers of *OSSOK* take care to inculcate to the people from the pulpit, that unless they perform their duty in this particular, the goddess will punish them after death. Persons of the greatest quality and estate pay the largest sum; every one declares exactly what he is worth; and as women are always very vain, some pay more than they wou'd be tax'd, purely to seem richer than they really are. To heighten the public felicity, all foreign commodities are allow'd to be imported in our island, free. Trade is open, and in a flourishing condition. We never hear of any bankrupts;

bankrupts; the whole body of female merchants having rais'd a public fund, to endemnify all such she-traders as have sustain'd losses through misfortune, and to remedy the evils they could not foresee.

I listned very attentively to all he told me, but cou'd hardly believe that women had such just and prudent ideas, and that their administration sham'd that of men. I earnestly wish'd, not only that our english women might govern as prudently as those of the island of *Babilary*; but that the men would, at least, guide the helm with as much judgment, and follow as sagacious maxims. My opinion is, that the chief reason why women govern so well, is, that whenever they hold the reins, they suffer themselves to be guided by the other sex; whereas, when men govern, they blindly follow the desires and dictates of women. Possibly, in the island of *Babilary*, men govern in reality; as we find that women generally bear the sway in *Europe*. I acquainted

Zandermein

Lindernein with my thought, and he ſeem'd to approve it.

I told him I intended to viſit the great ſquare of the city the next day. Accordingly we went thither, and I muſt confeſs I never ſaw ſo noble an area in the greateſt cities of *Europe*. 'Tis in the ſhape of an octogon, and ſix hundred yards over. The houſes round it are built in a grand taſte, and a moſt beautiful ſymmetry. In the middle ſtands the equeſtrian ſtatue of queen *Raſalu*, who reign'd fifty years ago, and built this magnificent ſquare; round which the ſtatues of all ſuch women, as have diſtinguiſh'd themſelves, ſince the revolution, by their ſingular merit, are plac'd. Theſe ſtatues not only repreſent the moſt illuſtrious female generals, but learned ſhe-civilians, famous mathematicians, illuſtrious women, whether poeteſſes or orators &c. On each ſide of the octogon an academy is built. The firſt is for mathematics; the ſecond for phyſics; the third for morality; the fourth for hiſtory; the fifth for eloquence and poetry;

poetry; the ſixth for painting, ſculpture, and architecture; the ſeventh for muſic; the eighth for mechanics in general. All theſe academies are fill'd with perſons of a diſtinguiſh'd merit. Ladies of the firſt quality are ſometimes admitted into them, not ſo much in conſideration of their exalted birth and fortune, as for their perſonal worth and knowledge. Every ſhe-academician is oblig'd, before ſhe is admitted a member, to give a public proof of her capacity.

CHAP. VII.

Mejax, governeſs of the principal port of the iſland, falls in love with the author, who alſo is captivated with her charms. She carries him off; delivers at the ſame time all his companions out of ſlavery, and flies away with them on board a veſſel, which ſhe had got ready for that purpoſe.

NOtwithſtanding that I was often in *Zindernein*'s company, he nevertheleſs us'd to leave me ſometimes, to

to give the neceſſary orders in the ſeraglio. I was not alone in his abſence, but had always a numerous levee of both ſexes. Sometimes too I us'd to converſe in private with ſome ladies of high birth and dignity. She among them who ſeem'd to be moſt aſſiduous in her addreſſes to me, was the governeſs of the port of *Pataka*, ſituated two leagues from the royal city; a woman of noble birth, rich, young, ſprightly; a finiſh'd beauty, and of a moſt amiable temper. I was ſo inchanted with her, that I was no longer ſenſible to the glory of marrying the queen; however, it was impoſſible for me to break my paſſion to her, without offending the rules of decorum; I alſo knew how dangerous it would be to ſooth ſuch a flame, eſpecially when I found ſhe was mutually ſtruck; but at the ſame time I foreſaw, that my heart could not long reſiſt the charms of ſo lovely a creature.

She one day came into my apartment when the company were gone, and there remain'd only a few ſlaves

with

with me, who withdrew out of reſpect the moment ſhe appear'd. *Mejax*, for that was her name, took this opportunity to tell me with a languiſhing air, that 'twas a great unhappineſs for her I was ſo beautiful; that my charms, which had awak'd the moſt tender paſſion in her heart, made it abſolutely impoſſible for her ever to be happy, ſince they had inflam'd the queen. Alas! ſays ſhe, with a paſſionate tone of voice, why did fate convey you into her majeſty's ſeraglio! why did not I prevent it; why did not *Zindernein* overlook your perfections! or why did I not bribe him when he firſt came aſhore on our iſland, after he had taken your veſſel! I then only might have had the happineſs of knowing, and poſſibly of pleaſing you.

As I was highly pleas'd with this declaration, I did not think proper to diſguiſe my ſentiments, in imitation of the mock ſeverity of our *European* ladies, who, on theſe delicate occaſions, generally aſſume an angry air. Since, ſays I, you make me ſo tender, ſo in-

genuous, and, as I believe, ſincere a confeſſion; I ſhan't ſcruple to own, that I have the higheſt ſenſe of the value of your love; that your merit has made the ſtrongeſt impreſſion on my heart; and that in caſe her majeſty had not allotted me the glory of being her conſort, I ſhould have thought it the greateſt happineſs to be yours only, and to be at liberty to marry you; eſpecially ſince that ſituation in life, tho' leſs glorious, would perhaps have been more permanent. But this is not a time to entertain ſuch thoughts. Stifle thoſe wiſhes as they interfere with my glory, and eſpecially ſince they may be of fatal conſequence to you.

Alas! cruel creature, ſays ſhe, will you then kill me? The queen is not yet married to you, and 'tis in your power to make me happy, without deſtroying your own felicity. Marry the queen, if fate will have it ſo, and ſince 'tis not in my power to oppoſe your exaltation; but then ſuffer me, at leaſt, to breathe my paſſion, and the tender reſpect I bear you; and let me flatter my

ſelf

ſelf ſo far, as to think you burn with a mutual flame.

Never did I ſee ſo much love in a woman, as *Mejax* diſcover'd at that inſtant. As I was paſſionately fond of her, I ſometimes wou'd reſolve to follow the cuſtom of my own country; and act like a man of honour and an *European*. But then nature wou'd dictate to me that I was a man; and ſometimes, the place, and the condition I was in, wou'd baniſh the remembrance of it from my mind; ſo that the part I was to act of a man who was feminiz'd, as it were, perplex'd me very much; not knowing whether I ſhould be bold or fearful, forward or reſerv'd. However, *Mejax* ſtill talk'd in a moſt languiſhing and paſſionate manner, and I continued to defend that virtue ſhe was endeavouring to ſeduce. I beg our *Engliſh* ladies to pardon the images and expreſſions I employ, which tho' ſo repugnant to our manners, are nevertheleſs agreeable to thoſe of *Babilary*, and the ambiguous ſituation I was then in.

In the mean time, methoughts it would be proper for me to take advantage of *Mejax*'s violent paſſion; not to gratify both her's and my own, but, if poſſible, to recover my liberty. *Mejax*, ſays I to her, 'twill be impoſſible for me ever to indulge your wiſhes, or ſuffer you to languiſh for me. The inſtant the queen does me the honour to take me to her bed, if you once preſume to mention your flame to me, you will be baniſh'd my preſence for ever. Nevertheleſs, I won't diſguiſe myſelf ſo far, as not to own that I love you tenderly; and that, notwithſtanding the glory to which I ſhall be rais'd, there is nothing I could more paſſionately wiſh than to be your husband. After all, this wou'd not be a fruitleſs or chimerical wiſh, had you but courage enough to ſecond it, and make choice of one of the expedients I ſhall now venture to propoſe. The firſt is, to divert the queen, if poſſible, from the deſign ſhe has of marrying me. In thus ſacrificing to you the exalted honour her majeſty prepares for me, I

ſhall

ſhall give you the ſtrongeſt proofs how dear you are to me. But as you may think this method impracticable; and that the attempting to extinguiſh her flame may be of dangerous conſequence, I had rather propoſe another expedient. You are governeſs of the port of *Pataka*, and have all that belongs to it at your diſpoſal: order a veſſel to be immediately fitted out, which we will go aboard on privately; when being got out of the reach of her majeſty's power, I'll gratify the utmoſt of our mutual wiſhes, without running the hazard of ruining you or myſelf. I am ſenſible, that you will thereby forfeit all the titles and eſtates you poſſeſs in this iſland, and be for ever depriv'd of them by this voluntary exile; but if you have a real and unreſerv'd paſſion for me, your generoſity will overlook thoſe conſiderations.

Mejax, who had liſtned to me with the deepeſt attention, ſeem'd quite loſt in thought. After having been long ſilent, ſhe broke into a ſigh, and an-

ſwer'd, that I propos'd a very odd expedient; however that true love was a ſtranger to politics, intereſt or dangers; that ſince I was brave enough to ſlight the honour of the queen's bed for her ſake, ſhe, in return, ought to ſacrifice her honours and poſſeſſions to mine; that there was no danger to which ſhe would not expoſe herſelf, to prove the deep ſenſe ſhe had of my love; that her reſolution was fixt; that as I was to marry the queen immediately, we had no time to loſe; and that ſhe'd uſe her utmoſt endeavours to carry me off on the morrow night, and put me on board a ſhip, which, happily for us, was going to weigh anchor in the road of *Pataka*.

But this, ſays I, is not all; you muſt free all our crew, who are ſlaves to different inhabitants of this iſland. They muſt be taken on board with us, and ſhare in my good fortune. I'll indulge, ſays ſhe, the utmoſt of your wiſhes, and will conduct you in triumph into your own country: thrice happy to ſpend the remainder of my days

days with ſo dear a man, tho' in the moſt remote regions!

As I knew where Capt. *Harrington* liv'd, who had complimented me upon my promotion, I told *Mejax* the place. She promis'd to ſend for him privately, and order him to be ready near *Pataka*, the next day, with as many of his fellow-captives as he could get together. She then took her leave, promiſing to love me eternally, and be inviolably faithful; when immediately ſhe went and prepar'd every thing for our departure.

I ſpent the reſt of the day in great anxiety, for fear leſt our plot ſhould not ſucceed; on which occaſion, I form'd a thouſand imaginary tortures; for then I foreſaw that my ruin and that of *Mejax* wou'd have been inevitable; and ſhould have reproach'd myſelf with being the wretched cauſe of her deſtruction. In order that I might not betray myſelf involuntarily; and to conceal my confuſion from the importunate glances of a prying court: I thought proper to feign an indiſpoſition,

and go to bed. In this perplexity, I was in some measure, if I may be allowed the whimsical comparison, in the condition of the author of a new tragedy, the first night of its representation. Conceal'd in the most obscure part of the box or gallery; actuated alternately by hope and fear; the moment the curtain rises, he feels joy or sorrow, according to the various emotions of the spectators, who are to pronounce his fate. If they laugh, he desponds; if they weep, he rejoices. He is transported with the hopes of its success; while the dread of its being hiss'd off the stage, freezes the blood in his veins: thus is he fluctuating till the fifth act, which pronounces his doom. Alas! the part I dar'd to act was deep tragedy. The business was either to recover my liberty, and complete my wishes and those of *Myax*; or to see us both deliver'd up, to the formidable vengeance of a despis'd, deluded queen.

Whilst I was in this cruel condition, her majesty, afflicted at my pretended indisposition,

indiſpoſition, honour'd me with a viſit, attended by *Zinderneim*. The husband ſhe had enjoy'd a twelve month, had been juſt before thank'd for his ſervices, and was conducted back into the ſeraglio; ſo that ſhe waited with extreme impatience, for the happy day appointed for the ſolemnization of our marriage. Finding me very much dejected, her majeſty was afraid my illneſs would retard the completion of her deſires. She ſpoke to me in the moſt affectionate terms; and I muſt confeſs, that in this inſtant, the thoughts of my treachery forc'd a pang from my heart, which very much increas'd my anguiſh and perplexity. But then, the deſire of obtaining my liberty; the hope of ſeeing again my country and family; and the violent paſſion I had for the charming *Mejax*, got the better of love and gratitude; ſo that I ſtrongly perſiſted in the dangerous deſign I had form'd of being run away with.

Her majeſty intreated me to take the greateſt care of my health, and not to deſpond; and after having diſcoyer'd

cover'd the moſt tender concern for my recovery, ſhe went away with a mournful and perplex'd air, and left *Zinderneim* with me. As I had a great affection for him, the thoughts of being ſoon ſeparated from ſo good a friend, heightned my diſtreſs. I once reſolv'd to reveal my deſign to him, and perſuade him to follow me; however I did not dare to break it to him, leſt his ſevere and uncorruptible fidelity, ſhould prove an invincible obſtacle to my deſigns. I likewiſe was afraid leſt I ſhould thereby expoſe my miſtreſs to danger, to whom I was ſo much oblig'd, and lov'd with ſo great an exceſs of paſſion.

The queen's *Rebecaſſes*, or female-phyſicians, came then into my chamber, and after having felt my pulſe, which they found very high, they began a conſultation upon my pretended illneſs. Some fancied I had an impoſthume in my head; others ſaid I had a ſchirrus in the liver; and others again that I had taken a ſurfeit. One was for having me blooded in the foot; and another

another wou'd have me take a kind of emetic. Had I follow'd all their preſcriptions, I ſhou'd have ſwallow'd down a thouſand doſes; and poſſibly have met with the fate of ſo many *European* princes and great men, who have frequently haſt'ned their death, by an overfond care of preſerving their lives. I aſſur'd all the *Rebecaſſes*, I was not ſick; and that my indiſpoſition was ſo ſlight, it would ſoon be cur'd without their aſſiſtance.

I indeed, got up the next day, and immediately had ſome diſcourſe with *Mejax*, who came to viſit me in the morning. She inform'd me, that all things were prepar'd; that ſhe had given the neceſſary orders; that *Harrington* had notice, and promis'd to be ready in the evening with the reſt of the *Engliſh*, in the road to *Pataka*. She added, that in her opinion, our deſign muſt ſucceed; that in the afternoon, I ſhould propoſe to take an airing in my calaſh, towards *Pataka*; that *Zindernein* and ſhe would do themſelves the honour to wait upon me. . . . . .

What!

What! ſays I interrupting her, is *Zindernein* in the plot? No, ſays *Mejax*: but 'twont be decent for you to take an airing with me, unleſs there be a man in the company; and *Zindernein* is the moſt proper perſon for our purpoſe, as the court won't have the leaſt ſuſpicion of him. When we ſhall have got near the port, ſeveral of my women, who will follow on horſeback, ſhall draw their ſwords, at a certain ſignal agreed upon between us; when *Harrington*, whom I have inſtructed in what he is to do, ſhall inſtantly come up with his men completely arm'd. With this reinforcement, our women will ſoon diſperſe the guards; when we will immediately make for the port; go on board the veſſel that lies ready, and ſend back *Zindernein*. The time and place for putting our deſign in execution, are both mark'd out; and provided *Harrington* is but truſty, and behaves himſelf valiantly, our deſign muſt certainly ſucceed. As *Harrington*, ſays I, has given you his word and honour, you

may

may depend upon his assistance, and that of his associates; not to mention, that the success of this affair is of the highest concern to them all.

I affected to be very jocund all the remaining part of the day, and receiv'd the compliments of the whole court, upon the recovery of my health. They did me the honour to affirm, that my indisposition had heighten'd my beauty; and laugh'd heartily at the *Rebecasses*, for intending to exhaust their whole art, in order to restore me to my health. But whilst the whole court was rejoycing at my pretended recovery; and delighted themselves with discoursing on the splendid preparations, which were ordain'd for the solemnization of our august nuptials; the news of an unexpected accident damp'd their joy, and threw them into the deepest affliction; for fear lest this misfortune should be of fatal consequence to her majesty. The beautiful and unfortunate *Sirilu*, who had flatter'd himself with the hopes of marrying the queen first; fearing lest his charms should fade,

fade, by his being ſuſpended a year; aſham'd to find himſelf loſt to all his expectations; and fancying, poſſibly, that ſince her majeſty was ſo fond of me, ſhe perhaps would keep me ſeveral years, had abandon'd himſelf to the deepeſt deſpair; and in the tranſports of his anguiſh, heighten'd by his natural melancholy, had ſtabb'd himſelf in the night; ſo that the next morning he was found breathleſs, and weltring in his own blood. 'Twas fear'd, that the queen, who ſeem'd to love him tenderly; and who, before ſhe knew me, intended to eſpouſe him that year, would be extremely afflicted for his untimely end, ſince ſhe had brought him to it; and being of a ſoft and compaſſionate caſt, wou'd abandon herſelf too much to melancholy. However, her majeſty was leſs afflicted at the news of this accident, than an *Engliſh* lady is commonly for the loſs of her favourite lap-dog. The queen's indifference upon this occaſion, was a glorious teſtimony of the great aſcendant I had over her. *Mejax* being come to me in the evening according

according to appointment, I propos'd to *Zindernein* our taking an airing towards *Pataka*. A little after, we got into the calash, attended by a guard of about twenty she-soldiers. These were joyn'd in the way by about fifty women on horseback, who seem'd desirous of partaking in our diversion, and of having the honour to escort us. *Mejax* and myself were both very uneasy at it; so that *Zindernein* did not know what construction to put upon our deep silence. He saw us throw our eyes continually on all sides; and observ'd in our looks that kind of fear and confusion, which is inseparable from all bold and hazardous attempts.

Being got in sight of the port, near a little wood, a large company of men came out of it and advanc'd towards us. The guards seem'd surpriz'd to see so great a company of men, without so much as one woman among them, and cou'd not forbear laughing. But how great was their surprize! when *Mejax* giving the signal, they saw all those men

men whom they deſpis'd, draw their fabres from under their gowns, and advance forward with a warlike and menacing air. The guards wou'd have fallen upon them; but the reſt of the women on horſeback, who were in the plot, taking out their piſtols, check'd their deſign, and immediately put them to flight.

Zindernein was ſeiz'd with the deepeſt tranſports of grief, and attempted to kill himſelf; but *Mojax* told him, ſhe was reſolv'd to carry me off, and marry me in a foreign country. She adviſ'd him to accompany us in our flight; beſides, ſays ſhe, as the queen entruſted this beautiful youth to your care, ſhe'll never pardon you for ſuffering him to eſcape; ſhe'll fancy you was one of my accomplices, at leaſt, that you're baſe and negligent. The moſt gentle puniſhment that will be inflicted on you, will be the loſs of your employment and her favour. To make the ſtronger impreſſion upon his mind, I ſaid, that ſuppoſing her majeſty would pardon him, and he ſhould be

be able to justify his conduct to her, he yet ought to abhor living in a country, where the men were so scandalously govern'd by the other sex. Have not I myself, says I to him, heard you sigh for this shameful subversion of the laws of nature? Come along with us, and I'll carry you into *England*, where you'll meet with all the honours due to your merit. I have, says *Mejax*, interrupting me, sent a casket of jewels on board; so that, in what part soever of the world fortune may throw us, we shall be perpetually happy, because we shall be rich. I'll divide my wealth with you; and *Gulliver*, who loves, and is belov'd by you, will complete your felicity.

Zindernein, after a moment's reflection, said he was resolv'd to go along with us; that indeed it would be very dangerous for him to continue in the island; that as he had no children, he was not bound to it by any tyes; and therefore was determin'd to share our fate.

Being all arriv'd at the port, we alighted from our horſes. Our countrymen got thither almoſt as ſoon as we did, and all the women having diſmounted, they got into a boat, and row'd towards the veſſel which lay at anchor. They afterwards put all our *Engliſhmen* on board. The ſhe-ſailors and the reſt of the female crew were for reſiſting, but it prov'd to no purpoſe: *Mejax* no ſooner appear'd, but they all threw down their arms, when the ſhe-troopers and our ſailors ſeiz'd upon the ſhip, on which *Mejax*, *Zindernein*, and I went aboard. Immediately after we weighed anchor, and ſteer'd eaſtward. It was agreed that *Mejax* ſhould command the ſhip during the whole courſe, and that *Harrington* ſhould be her ſecond captain. Our ſailors were commanded to work the ſhip, under the conduct of our pilot, who was an able and experienc'd man; and the *Babilarian* women had orders to defend us in caſe of an attack.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The queen of Babilary *ſends two veſſels in purſuit of* Mejax; *a bloody engagement enſues. Victorious* Mejax *is wounded and dies. They caſt anchor before an iſland. Danger the author is in.*

THE wind was not very favourable, ſo that the next day after our departure, we had not got above ſix leagues from the port, when we perceiv'd two ſhips in purſuit of us. We crouded all our ſail, and being reſolved to go whither the wind would carry us, we ſteer'd ſouthward, the wind being north. However, the two veſſels ſtill kept after us, and as they were lighter than ours, they came nearer to us inſenſibly. We concluded they would come up with us before night, and prepar'd to fight them. Accordingly, about four in the evening they were come within cannon-ſhot; and we then found, as we had ima-

gin'd, that they were two *Babilarian* veſſels mann'd (if I may be excus'd the great impropriety) with women, according to the cuſtom of that country.

When the two ſhips were come up with us, they put out the long-boat to acquaint us with her majeſty's orders, and commanded us to return into the port; threatning in caſe we refus'd, to fall upon us immediately. We declar'd we wou'd not obey; and were reſolv'd to defend ourſelves in caſe of an attack. In the mean time we were all come upon deck: *Mejax* with her drawn ſabre, at the head of all her women; *Harrington* and I, at the head of ſuch of the male part of the crew, as were not ſet to the guns, or employ'd in working the ſhip. After ſeveral broad-ſides, the two veſſels grappled ours, and were for boarding us. The battle was dreadful and bloody; *Mejax* behav'd with inexpreſſible bravery, as did all the women who fought with her. As the attack was chiefly carried on on that ſide, we all, both men and women, reinforc'd her; and I fought like

like a deſperado at *Mejax*'s ſide, who ſeem'd to be in more concern for my life than ſhe was for her own. At laſt, we repuls'd the enemy, who deſpairing to conquer us, and fearing we ſhould board them, and take their veſſels, thought proper to ſheer off.

However, we loſt but four men and ten women, who died in the bed of honour; and had not above twenty wounded of both ſexes. But what pangs did I feel, when I ſaw *Mejax* cover'd with her own blood! ſhe had fought to the laſt gaſp, and the heat of the engagement had prevented her taking notice of three wounds ſhe had receiv'd, the moſt dangerous of which was in her breaſts; the ſword having enter'd at her right, and run quite through to her left breaſt. Our ſurgeon prob'd the wounds, and aſſur'd us they were mortal; and *Mejax* herſelf was ſenſible ſhe had but a very ſhort time to live. I did not ſtir from her in this extremity, and obſerving I wept bitterly, ſhe did all that lay in her power to comfort me.

Cou'd I, ſays ſhe to me, have poſſibly aſpir'd to a more glorious death? 'Tis true indeed, that I die in open rebellion againſt my ſovereign; but then is it a crime in a ſubject, to diſpute with her queen, the dominion of a heart? I have defended my conqueſt; love has ſeconded my bravery; I am come off victorious: heaven will not allow me to reap the fruit of my victory. Live, adorable *Gulliver*: I die, alas! in the dread of living for ever in your heart. It grieves me to the ſoul, when I think of the cutting pangs my death will make you feel. Do all that lies in your power, I beſeech you, to forget me; and hereafter devote yourſelf to every thing that may contribute, to blot from your mind the ſad remembrance of the tender *Mejax*. What will it avail me to be in your thoughts when I am no more? Your ſighs and tears will not be able to recal me to life, nor be of any other uſe but to diſturb your own.

At the ſame time that ſhe was thus taking an everlaſting adieu, with the true

ſpirit

ſpirit of a heroine, ſhe gave me all her jewels, but adviſed me to ſell them the firſt opportunity, for fear leſt the ſight of them, ſhould awake in my mind, the mournful idea of the woman who had lov'd me ſo paſſionately. She then commanded her women to follow me whitherſoever I ſhould go, and charg'd them to defend me valiantly on all occaſions. A little after, ſhe breath'd her laſt, to the great grief of all the women her followers, and the whole *Engliſh* crew, who ow'd their freedom to her generoſity; and whoſe valour had preſerv'd them from falling into ſlavery a ſecond time.

I was deeply afflicted at her death, and found it impoſſible for me to arm myſelf with that philoſophical inſenſibility, ſhe had ſo much recommended in her dying moments. In her, I loſt a generous benefactreſs and an accompliſh'd lover. Capt. *Harrington* and *Zindernein* did their utmoſt to ſooth my grief, which forc'd a flood of tears from my eyes for three days ſucceſſively. While I was thus prey'd upon by

affliction, I was oblig'd to take a little ſuſtenance in order to ſupport nature; I wiſh'd to go to *Mojax*, and life was become odious to me. All the women on board admir'd my tenderneſs, and eſteem'd me much more upon that account.

In the mean time we ſtill ſteer'd ſouthward, as the wind drove us, and endeavour'd to diſcover ſome iſland to take in water, becauſe our ſhip had been equipp'd very precipitately; and our ſudden flight had not allowed us time, to take a quantity ſufficient for our voyage. About a week after we diſcover'd a very ſmall iſland, and taking it for one of the *Moluccas*, we reſolv'd to caſt anchor before it. We enter'd a ſmall bay, in the weſtern part of the iſland, when part of our men and women, I being in the company, got into the long-boat, and went on ſhore.

We went about half a league up the country, in ſearch of a ſpring, and being got near a wood which ſtood at a little diſtance from a mountain, we ſe-

perated

perated a little. *Harrington* went one way with ten or twelve *Engliſh*, and myſelf another, with about the ſame number of women, and not one man but myſelf. Theſe *Babilarian* women, who had a great affection for me, wou'd not ſuffer me to go with the *Engliſh*, imagining I ſhould be ſafer with them. We were all well arm'd, and in a condition to defend ourſelves, in caſe the inhabitants had attacked us. However, we march'd with great circumſpection, and endeavour'd to ſtand upon our guard.

Scarce had my little company gone a quarter of a league along the wood ſide, but we were perceiv'd by about a hundred ſavages, who ſat on the top of the mountain. Immediately they came down very haſtily, and ſcour'd about on all ſides. As they were ſuperiour in number, and would have been too hard a match for us, we thought proper to haſten back to the ſhore; but, they intercepted us. We then ſaw a company of men, moſt of them ſix foot high,

high, naked, beardleſs, and their skins quite red.

Having ſurrounded us, they threatned to knock our brains out, in caſe we refus'd to ſurrender; and indeed, they had already wounded two of our *Babilarian* women with their arrows. Immediately they fell upon us, diſarm'd us, and began to ſtrip us. As I was at the head of the company, they diſarm'd and ſtript me firſt. But how great was their aſtoniſhment, when they found that the reſt were women, and moſt of them young and handſome! They ſeem'd to be overjoy'd at this diſcovery; and laughing, immediately fell a dancing.

In the mean time I was ty'd to a tree with willow twigs, when I ſaw a moſt ſhocking ſcene. Theſe rude, barbarous ſavages, like the fabulous ſatyrs of antiquity, threw themſelves ſuddenly on the women, and ſatiated in ſo furious a manner their ungovernable luſt, that moſt of the unhappy creatures unable to bear up under it, fainted away in their arms. As they were

wholly

wholly employ'd in gratifying their brutality, and took no notice of me, I inſenſibly unloos'd the willow bands, when ſlipping into the wood unperceiv'd, I ran as faſt as my legs would carry me towards the ſhore, where, to my great joy, I perceiv'd our long-boat, coaſting along the iſland.

As ſoon as our People ſaw me, they made towards the land, when jumping into the long-boat, I told them the danger I had been in, and the ſad fate the *Babilarian* women my companions had met with. We thought fit to continue ſome time in the bay, and coaſt along the ſhore, in hopes that our female companions might be as fortunate as myſelf, and eſcape from the barbarians. But we waited to no purpoſe, and therefore return'd on board.

When the *Babilarian* women who had ſtaid on board, were told what had happen'd to their companions, they were immediately for revenging them, and for that purpoſe deſir'd our captain to put them aſhore in order to attack the inhabitants. A council was held, and

and as we had no opportunity of taking in water in this iſland, it was reſolv'd we ſhould run all hazards. Accordingly an hundred and thirty of us went on ſhore, ninety of whom were men and the reſt women, all arm'd with ſabres, muskets and bayonets.

We advanc'd in good order towards the place where the ſavages had come upon us by ſurprize, and found only two *Babilarian* women dead of their wounds. We then march'd towards the mountain, and being got on the top of it, diſcover'd ſeveral huts. We naturally ſuppos'd that this was the haunt of the ſavages, but not hearing the leaſt noiſe, we drew near to it ſoftly, when we perceiv'd ſeveral of the inhabitants aſleep. We advanc'd ſtill farther, and ſaw at a diſtance our *Babilarian* women bound together and lying near a hut. We march'd towards them, when inſtantly ſeveral ſavages who were not aſleep, ſet up a dreadful roar, which wak'd all their companions.

Immediately we fell upon them, and having ſhot the firſt, the reſt took

to their heels. But our *Babilonian* women ſurrounding the dwelling, prevented their flight, and cut a great many of them to pieces. The female-priſoners, who were then ſet at liberty by our *Engliſhmen*, dreſſing themſelves, and ſnatching up their arms, which lay in a neighbouring hut, they joyn'd us, and compleated the defeat of the barbarians. Being tranſported with fury, they would have reſerv'd thoſe who had ſeem'd moſt eager in tormenting them, for a cruel puniſhment. They bound ten of theſe, and carried them to the ſhore, where, in ſpight of all we could do, they burnt them alive.

After this expedition, we advanc'd into the wood along the ſide of the mountain, where we found a ſpring. Here we quench'd our thirſt, and ſent for hogſheads in order to fill them with water. Whilſt part of our crew were doing this, the reſt hunted in the wood, and kill'd a great quantity of game, which being carried

carried on board, serv'd to solemnize our victory.

We did not think proper to continue longer in this island, for fear lest a fresh company of savages should fall upon, and oppress us with numbers. Accordingly we all return'd on shipboard, after having sent thither our butts which we had fill'd with water, and immediately weigh'd anchor.

CHAP. IX.

The author is shipwreck'd and escapes in a canoe. He goes on shore on the island of Tilibet, *where he is made a slave. Description of the manner of its inhabitants. The short term of years they are allow'd to live, and the use they make of life.*

CApt. *Harrington's* design, to whom I had given part of the jewels *Mejax* had bequeath'd me at her death, was to return to *England*; highly satisfy'd with the present I made

made him, which was of much greater value than if he had brought a cargo of goods. As we had no commodities on board our veſſel, 'twou'd have been ridiculous in us to have made for any other place; and therefore I join'd with him in opinion, that we ſhou'd ſail for *Europe*, which we accordingly did. After ſix weeks ſail, during which we had a pretty favourable wind, we were overtaken by a violent ſtorm, in about twelve degrees of northern latitude, and an hundred and four of longitude. The raging winds, after having tore all our ſails to pieces, carried off our mizen maſt, and alſo our boit-ſprit. As the boiſterous waves overwhelm'd the veſſel, pumping was of little ſervice; when running upon the rocks, it was bruis'd, and immediately ſprung a leak in ſeveral places, ſo that 'twas manifeſt we muſt inevitably ſuffer ſhipwreck.

However, the rocks we ſplit upon, ſhew'd we were not far diſtant from ſome land, which yet we could not ſee becauſe of the pitchy darkneſs.

In

In this extremity, we thought proper to leave the ſhip and run a-ground. We put out the long-boat, and immediately the whole crew of both ſexes got on board of her. I alſo was going to jump in, when unfortunately I took it into my head to look after my casket of jewels, which was in a cheſt that ſtood in the captain's cabin. Accordingly I ran to the cheſt, open'd it, and immediately took out the casket, but that very inſtant the veſſel was ſinking. I gave myſelf over for loſt, and began to run with all ſpeed towards the long-boat, but thoſe who were in her, were in ſuch trouble and confuſion, that not recollecting I was left behind, they cut the cable which held the long-boat to the ſhip; and immediately the impetuoſity of the waves drove them ſo far, that 'twas impoſſible for them to give me the leaſt aſſiſtance.

In this extreme, I had no time to debate, upon which I jump'd into one of the canoos, and inſtantly cut the cable that faſtned it to the ſhip, which immediately founder'd. 'Twas to no purpoſe

purpoſe for me to attempt to row to the long-boat; the ſea ran ſo high, and 'twas ſo dark, that I ſoon loſt ſight of it.

I row'd a long time together, without knowing whether I drew nearer, or further off from land; and all my endeavours now were to ſtruggle with the waves, and preſerve myſelf from ſhipwreck. However, the ſky clear'd up by degrees; the wind fell, and the ſea grew pretty calm. I ſaw land, and the ſight of it ſoon'd the agonies of my ſoul. I took heart, and row'd with all my ſtrength in order to reach the ſhore; flattering myſelf with the hopes of meeting my companions there; but alas! I never once ſet eyes on any of them ſince, Capt. *Harrington* excepted, as I ſhall relate hereafter. They were ſwallow'd up by the waves; and I ſhall ever deplore the remembrance of my dear companions, eſpecially *Zindernein* and the brave *Babilarian* women.

After rowing five hours, I at laſt reach'd the coaſt, and landed before ſun-ſet. As I was quite ſpent, I ga-

ther'd ſome fruits, which I happily found at a little diſtance from the ſhore. I went up to a riſing ground, whence I ſaw a country very well cultivated, and a few villages. I then concluded that the inhabitants liv'd under a regular form of government, which was ſome conſolation to me. I wou'd have gone towards thoſe villages, but night came upon me in the way; and now, not knowing where to go, I ſtopt and climb'd up a tree, in order to ſhelter myſelf from wild beaſts and ſpend the night. The reader will ſuppoſe I had very little ſleep, and that I revolv'd a thouſand thoughts in my mind, all which I would now relate, did I not know that the reflections of the wretched and unhappy, are always ungrateful.

The next morning, at day-break, I was wak'd by the barking of dogs, who were got about the tree where I had hid myſelf; and at the ſame time I perceiv'd a handſome young man, with a quiver of arrows over his ſhoulders, advancing towards the place where I lay. He was come pretty near it, and

was

was going to let fly an arrow at me, when I ſet up a dreadful cry. The young man, who poſſibly took me, as he ſaw me through the leaves, for ſome great bird; hearing a human voice, immediately ſtoop'd his bow, and drew near to the tree. Finding the hunter was humane, I came down from the tree, threw myſelf at his feet, and made a thouſand ſupplicating geſtures, in order to teſtify my reſpect and ſubmiſſion, and how much I ſtood in need of his ſuccour.

He look'd at me ſome time, and by ſeveral kind ſigns, gave me to underſtand he would take me under his protection, and that no evil ſhould befall me. He then bid me follow him, and pointing to a houſe, which appear'd large and regularly built, he carried me to it. Being come in, I ſaw a woman whom I ſuppos'd to be his wife, and ſeveral children and ſervants, who were all very kind, and offer'd me victuals. The lady of the houſe, ſeeing a casket of jewels under my arm, deſir'd to ſee it. I preſented it to

her, and thought myſelf indiſpenſably oblig'd to make her a preſent of it. She open'd the casket, and viewing what was in it, return'd it me, and wou'd not touch one of the diamonds. Obſerving I offer'd it to her in a very courteous manner, and preſs'd her to accept of ſome of the moſt valuable jewels; ſhe ſmil'd with a kind of ſcorn, and gave me to underſtand, that thoſe trifles were not worthy of being either offer'd or accepted. I was afterwards inform'd, that the inhabitants of this country, had no manner of eſteem for diamonds, as being of no ſervice to the neceſſities or pleaſures of life: ſurprizing blindneſs! not to be ſenſible of the worth of thoſe ſhining ſtones, which having the admirable faculty of reflecting light more ſtrongly than all other natural bodies, are therefore juſtly had in ſo high eſteem; and ſo much ſought after in *Europe*, that the ladies frequently prefer them, to what they ought to value more than any other thing in the world.

Having

Having given my patrons to underſtand that I was a foreigner; that I was come from a very remote country, and had been ſhipwreck'd on their coaſt, they ſeem'd to pity me; and endeavour'd to comfort me by giving me to underſtand that they'd be very kind to me, provided I ſerv'd them with affection and fidelity. A few days after, I had a dreſs given me, like that of the other ſlaves of the family; and was order'd to ſuperintend the baths of *Jalaſſu*, for ſo was the miſtreſs of the family call'd. I was under great terror when this employment was given me; and imagin'd, that ſince I was inveſted with a poſt of ſuch conſiderable truſt, I was to be ſerv'd in the ſame manner as the *Turkiſh* ſlaves, to whom this province is allotted. However, my fears were very ill grounded; for the men of this country, as I was afterwards inform'd, unprey'd upon by jealouſy, are ſo firmly perſuaded of the chaſtity of their wives, that they don't uſe any expedients to ſecure themſelves of it. As husbands repoſe

ſo generous a confidence in their wives, theſe are inviolably true to their bed; and never abuſe a liberty, that would make thoſe criminal pleaſures inſipid to them, in which the ſuſpicion of a jealous husband only, gives a reliſh to the enjoyment.

I had ſcarce been a month in the houſe, when all the ſlaves were wak'd at midnight, becauſe *Jalaſſu* was in labour. We all enter'd her apartment, in order to aſſiſt her if it were neceſſary. She had a good time, and was deliver'd of a ſon. But how great was my ſurprize, when I ſaw the babe ſhe had brought into the world but an hour before, ſeated on a chair, opening its eyes, looking with curioſity round about, and pronouncing ſome words that none underſtood! Inſtead of crying, as all our children do when they come into the world, he laugh'd, ſung, and diſcover'd the pleaſure he felt, to find himſelf iſſued from his mother, like a priſoner who is newly ſet at liberty. He ſeem'd overjoy'd to ſee himſelf riſen from a ſtate of non-exiſtance,

ſtance, and to find himſelf numbred among the living.

Immediately he roſe up, and ran to his mother who gave him ſuck. Some hours after, a taylor was ſent for to take meaſure of him, and make him a ſuit, which was order'd to be diſpatch'd out of hand, becauſe the child almoſt grew up under the eye; for which reaſon they were oblig'd to make him a new ſuit every month. I admir'd that nature ſhould be ſo favourable to mankind in thoſe countries, and indulge them the enjoyment of life the inſtant they are born.

The ſame day a maſter of languages was ſent for, to teach the new-born infant to ſpeak. The preceptor only ſounded a ſubſtantive or other part of ſpeech; this the child repeated, and immediately treaſur'd it for ever in his memory. And indeed, in a fortnight's time, he talk'd as plain as the reſt of the children of the family. I took this opportunity to learn the language alſo. But how happy ſoever my memory may be, I muſt confeſs I employ'd

much more time in learning all thoſe words. However, in three months, I knew enough to make myſelf underſtood, and to comprehend whatever was ſaid to me.

Scarce was I able to expreſs my thoughts, when I ask'd one of the oldeſt of my fellow-ſlaves, who had the greateſt favour ſhewn him by our maſter; if all the children of the houſe, reſembled the laſt our miſtreſs was deliver'd off? Whether they all learnt the language at that age, with as much eaſe as he did; and whether in three months, their minds were as ſtrong and capacious? What's that you ſay, ſays he? This child knows nothing but his own tongue, whereas he ought by this time to have learnt a little muſic and dancing. I am certain, he'll hardly know his exerciſes by that time he's two years old. He is little of his age, and hardly four foot in ſtature. Children, ſays I, ſhoot up in a very ſhort time in your country! Why don't they in yours, ſays he? No, no, ſays I, very far from it.

Why

Why now how old d'ye think I am? Five, ſays he, for you ſeem to be about the ſame age as I am. You are mightily out, ſays I, I am twenty. Heavens, ſays he, twenty! impoſſible ſure. That is the longeſt period of our lives; at leaſt, no man ever liv'd to above four and twenty, and yet you ſeem as young and robuſt as I am. Having aſſur'd him, that what I told him of my age was fact; and that in my country men liv'd to fourſcore, and ſometimes an hundred years of age, he ſtarted up, and ran to *Furofolo*, for that was our maſter's name, to relate all I had told him.

Upon this, all the family began to ſtare at me, as if they had never ſeen me before. They cou'd not believe what I told them, and ask'd me a thouſand queſtions, to aſcertain themſelves of the truth of it. An able mathematician, who was in the houſe, and taught the mathematicks to the two youngeſt children, ask'd me ſlily, whether I remembred to have ſeen an eclipſe of the ſun in my country. As

I

I knew perfectly that I had ſeen ſix, and had not forgot the year, the month, the day, or hour when they happen'd; becauſe, I had lov'd, from my infancy, to enquire about every thing which related to the heavens; I gave him an exact account of all I cou'd recollect. Immediately he turn'd to his aſtronomical books, and found that the eclipſes happen'd at the very time I mention'd. Thus, we are told, the *Chineze* pretend to prove the antiquity of their empire, and the veracity of their hiſtory; by ſhewing, that their antient books mention ſeveral eclipſes, agreable to the laws of the motion of of the planets; and by proving that the writers of thoſe books muſt neceſſarily have ſeen them, becauſe theſe volumes exiſted at a time when their anceſtors where wholly ignorant of aſtronomy; and incapable of making exactly retrogade calculations with reſpect to the combination, anteriorly poſſible, of celeſtial motions.

The mathematician, ſtruck with my anſwers, told the family I certainly

was as old as I affirm'd myſelf to be, and that there was not the leaſt room to doubt of it. In what manner, ſays my maſter to me, have you ſpent ſo long a courſe of years? During the firſt ſix or ſeven years of my life, ſays I, I had not the leaſt uſe of my reaſon or liberty. At three years of age I ſounded words very imperfectly; at four I began to talk a little; then I was taught to read, and afterwards to write, when I was ſent to ſchool, where I ſtudied ſeven years.

What did you ſtudy, during ſo long a time, ſays *Furoſolo*? The *Greek* and *Latin* tongues, ſays I. I preſume, ſays he, they are the languages of ſome nations bordering upon your own. No, ſays I, they are dead languages. Why then, ſays he, were you made to learn them? Wou'd you not have ſpent your time to much better purpoſe, in ſtudying things that might have been of advantage to your family and country, or capable of rendering life more agreable? I anſwer'd, that ſeveral men among us, devoted three

parts

parts in four of their lives to the ſtudy of thoſe tongues; that they alſo learnt ſeveral other dead languages, ſuch as the *Hebrew*, the *Samaritan* and *Chaldee*; that indeed thoſe linguiſts did not make the greateſt figure among our *Literati*; but that we had thoſe in much higher eſteem, who had the courage to ſpend their whole lives in treaſuring up in their memories, the æras and circumſtances of all incidents; and enquir'd into all the tranſactions which had happen'd in the world before they exiſted, from the creation to the preſent age.

How idly, ſays *Furoſolo*, do you employ the long life that is indulg'd you! I find, that tho' you live four times as long as we do, you yet don't live longer, in reality, ſince three fourths of your life are abſolutely loſt. Can any thing be more ridiculous, than to employ ſo many years in learning the art to expreſs the ſame thing by a variety of terms? your conduct on this occaſion, is like that of a workman, who, inſtead of learning his trade, and improving

proving himſelf in it, ſhould waſt a long courſe of years in getting by heart, the different names by which his tools were antiently call'd. With regard to your intenſe application to hiſtory, why are you ſo ſollicitous to know all that has occurr'd ſince the beginning of the world? Are not the preſent incidents ſufficient to employ or amuſe us? What have we to do with things that happen'd before we were born? Time paſt is fled and gone; and therefore can any thing be ſo trifling as to enquire into it? Time paſt exiſts no more than the future; and in my opinion, 'tis equally ridiculous to ſearch into either of them.

Such was *Furoſolo*'s paradoxical philoſophy, agreable to the odd notions which the inhabitants of that iſland, call'd in their language *Tilibet*, have imbib'd. As theſe live but a ſpan, they employ it to very great advantage. Their whole aim is enjoyment, without once troubling themſelves with knowledge; nor do they, like us, devote a conſiderable part of life, in making

king ſuperfluous proviſions for a journey, which is always ended, before we have got together a ſtore ſufficient for our purpoſe.

What other employments do your countrymen follow, ſays *Furofolo?* Some, ſays I, apply themſelves to trade, others embrace a military life; others again. . . . . What, ſays he, have you ſo little regard to the long life you are indulg'd, as to venture loſing it in battle? We, tho' our lives are ſo ſhort, do nevertheleſs look upon war as a real madneſs; not but that we fight ſometimes, when diviſions happen to break out among us. But cou'd we flatter ourſelves with the hopes of living ſo long as you do, I am certain, not one of my countrymen wou'd be ſo ſtupid, as to hazard the loſing ſo precious ſo laſting a jewel. I find that long life is a burthen to you, and that you ſometimes endeavour to while and trifle part of it away, and at others, to rid your ſelves of it at once.

This is but too true, ſays I: in our opinion, the greateſt misfortune that can

can poſſibly befall us, is to be reduc'd to think that we exiſt; a reflection, which, in ſome meaſure, deſtroys us. Hence it is, that we ſtrike into a thouſand different employments, in order to baniſh that dreadful idea, which is no other than that *tædium* or languor, defin'd by our philoſophers, *the attending to the ſucceſſive parts of our duration.* I cou'd ſcarce make *Furofolo* underſtand the meaning of *tædium*; becauſe as theſe people are always eaſy, they have no word in their language to expreſs that ſickneſs of the ſoul, nor the leaſt idea of it. They are not, like a multitude of our *Europeans*, melancholy thro' complexion, and ſad from caprice. The joy and ſatisfaction of their ſouls, ſparkles on their ever-vacant and ſerene countenances; and they ſeem to practice in a literal ſenſe, the precept of *Horace*, * *Dona præſentis rape lætus horæ.*

Wholly employ'd on the preſent, they forget the paſt, and deſpiſe the future;

* *And ſnatch the bleſſings of the preſent hour.*

future; and their hearts are equally free from frivolous fears and chimerical hopes. Life appears to them too ſhort, to be ſpent in feeding ones ſelf with boundleſs deſires; and to waſte the preſent moment, in thinking on what's to come. They are happy to day, and don't trouble themſelves about being ſo to morrow.

During my ſtay in the iſland of *Tilibet*, I enquir'd very carefully into the manners of its inhabitants, and the genius of their government. That part of the iſland in which I liv'd, was rul'd by a monarch, who was then in the flower of his youth, being four years old. His firſt miniſter was ſixteen; who, tho' ſo far advanc'd in years, was very hearty and vigorous both in body and mind. He directed the prince, and govern'd the kingdom, with the moſt conſummate wiſdom. The common people, as well as the Great, applauded his happy adminiſtration, and wiſh'd it might laſt for ever. This great man, entirely devoted to the adminiſtration, and the intereſt of the people, inſeperable

inſeperable from thoſe of the ſovereign; was modeſt, polite, affable, and diſintereſted; qualities which endear'd him very much to the king, who being a great lover of truth and juſtice, cou'd not but follow exactly all the counſels of ſo moderate and judicious a miniſter. By his great aſſiduity, truth prevail'd at court, and juſtice in the tribunals. There are alſo two other kingdoms in our iſland, each of which is govern'd by a particular prince. By the wiſdom of this miniſter, the three monarchs live in perfect harmony; and he himſelf is always choſen arbiter, whenever any diſpute ariſes among them.

Such arts and ſciences as are uſeful to mankind, and all that contributes to the perfection of human nature, are, as indeed they ought to be, duly eſteem'd by the inhabitants of this iſland; and all perſons who diſtinguiſh themſelves by the ſuperiority of their talents, are always protected by the miniſter, who obſerv'd, that the inſtant they ceas'd to be patroniz'd, learning

and arts, for want of emulation, and motives for being cultivated, were wholly forgot; and that the human mind was over-run with ignorance and ſtupidity. And indeed, the king is moſt aſſiduous in ſupporting ſuch of his ſubjects, as are diſtinguiſh'd by a ſuperiority of genius.

One particular circumſtance in the court of this prince, which cannot be parallel'd in thoſe of *Europe*, is, that leſs regard is had to extraction, than to innate greatneſs of mind; and that virtue and merit only reflect a luſtre on the poſſeſſor. Perſons are rais'd to employments in the State, not by powerful cabals, or ſimulated virtues, but for rectitude of ſoul and capacity. The prince's court conſiſts wholly of perſons of a ſuperior merit; and it may be juſtly affirm'd, that he ſees the beſt company in his kingdom.

The *Tilibetans* are wholly ignorant of navigation, becauſe they think life too ſhort and too precious, to be ſpent in troubleſome voyages, and be expoſed to the dangers of the Sea. The reader

reader will eaſily gueſs the reaſon, why the inhabitants of theſe iſlands ſleep as little as poſſible, and much leſs than we do. *Furoſolo* obſerving me to ſleep ſeven hours together, ſaid to me one day: you drowze away the third part of your life, ſo that 'tis not ſo long as I thought it was. As for us, whoſe life is ſhorter, we ſpend every moment of it to advantage; and as ſleep is a kind of death, we fly from it to the utmoſt of our power, and uſe ourſelves not to ſleep above an hour in the four and twenty.

I then told him, that among us the women, and ſometimes the men, often ſlept ten or twelve hours together; or at leaſt lay half the day in bed, purpoſely to contract it as much as lay in their power: that we look'd upon the art of whiling away the time as a great happineſs; inſomuch that we gave the name of paſtime, to our moſt darling pleaſures: that a long and a ſorrowful day, were with us ſynonimous terms; and that he was look'd upon as the

happieſt man, who had liv'd long, and thought his life very ſhort.

Furoſolo, ſurpriz'd at what I told him, ask'd me at what age we began to enjoy our liberty and concern ourſelves with worldly affairs? Whether we were not afflicted with languiſhing diſeaſes, and corroding cares? Whether if in old age, and when we were threeſcore, we enjoy'd a perfect health, and were ſtill agreeable to ſociety.

I anſwer'd, that we did not begin to be free, and concern ourſelves with affairs, till about twenty: that we were frequently oppreſs'd with grief and ſickneſs, eſpecially, if we gave too great a looſe to our paſſions: that in the latter part of our courſe, we were obnoxious to a thouſand ſiniſter accidents; that we grew peeviſh and troubleſome; and that young people generally ſhunn'd the company of thoſe in years.

We have nothing of this among us, ſays he. We are free, and generally enter upon buſineſs at four years of age.

age. Our bodies are not ſubject to infirmities of any kind; except, when we are in a very advanc'd age, that is about ſeventeen or eighteen, in which ſeaſon, we nevertheleſs preſerve all the gayety of youth. So that, computing the time you ſleep; that which you loſe before you come upon the ſtage of the world; that which ſorrow and diſeaſe render inſupportable; and the mournful courſe of years of which your old age is compos'd: I believe it will be found in the whole, that we live longer than thoſe who among you, are indulg'd the longeſt life.

CHAP. X.

The author escapes from the island of Tilibet, *and goes on board a* Portugueze *vessel which puts into an island. He is taken by savages, who are going to knock out his brains, and eat him. In what manner he is deliver'd.*

NOtwithstanding *Furofolo*, his wife, and the rest of the family were very kind to me, I nevertheless began to be weary of the island, which I had now liv'd a twelve-month in, and of the mean condition to which I was reduc'd; so that I was continually revolving day and night how to escape from it. I regretted the island of *Babilary*, and with grief compar'd my present shameful captivity, to the exalted rank I had abandon'd.

One day as I was walking alone on the sea shore, from which *Furofolo*'s house was not far distant, I perceiv'd a long-boat lying at anchor, and ten or twelve men well

well arm'd, who were juſt landed, and ſeem'd looking about for a ſpring. The ſight of men in *European* habits gave me the higheſt joy; but then I was afraid leſt they ſhould take me for ſome ſpy, ſent out by the inhabitants, and would therefore perhaps murther me. For this reaſon I hid myſelf in a little wood that was juſt by, in order to obſerve their motions unperceiv'd. In the mean time, they came ſo near to the place where I lay, that I could hear them ſpeak *Portugueze*. Upon this, I came out of the place where I was conceal'd; ſaluted them in a civil manner, and addreſs'd them in that language which I had learnt of a *Portugueze*, who was on board our veſſel when we left *England*.

The *Portugueze*, taking me at firſt for one of their countrymen, embrac'd me; and after giving me the greateſt teſtimonies of friendſhip, ask'd me what I did in that iſland, which they ſuppos'd had never been viſited by any *European*. I told them, I had been thrown on that coaſt by a ſtorm,

which had ſunk the veſſel I came in; and had been for a twelve-month a ſlave in that iſland; that I beſought them to ſet me at liberty; that as they ſeem'd to be looking for a ſpring, in order to take in freſh water, I wou'd ſhew them one; and that whilſt they ſhould be filling their hogſheads, I wou'd go to the houſe where I liv'd, which was not above a league's diſtance from thence; in order to bring away the little I had been able to ſave from ſhipwreck.

They promis'd in the moſt obliging terms, not to go on board till my return. Then, after ſhewing them the ſpring, I ran home to fetch my jewels. Being got thither, *Furoſolo*, with whom I had entruſted them, was unluckily gone abroad. This was a ſad diſappointment; but fearing leſt he ſhould not return home ſome time, I reſolv'd to abandon my treaſure. However, my maſter return'd a little after, when I immediately deſir'd him to give me my caſket. What, ſays he to me, art thou going to do with

with thoſe glittering ſtones? Haſt thou met with any perſon, who is ſilly enough to purchaſe them? I anſwer'd with an air of confuſion, that I had met with an opportunity to diſpoſe of them in ſuch a manner as might afterwards be of ſome advantage to me. So much the better, ſays he; I am glad any benefit accrues to thee from ſuch trifles.

I took my casket, and immediately leaving the houſe, without once bidding farewel to any one in it, I went a bye way to the place where the *Portugueze* promis'd to wait for me. I aſſiſted them in filling their hogſheads, and ſtepping into the long-boat, went on board their veſſel, which lay at anchor about half a league from the ſhore.

The captain receiv'd me with great affability and politeneſs, and tho' I told him I was an *Engliſhman*, he nevertheleſs treated me as kindly as if I had been his countryman. Having related to him the ſeveral adventures I had met with, ſince my leaving *England*,

land, which was three years; he congratulated me on my good fortune, in being deliver'd from ſo many dangers; and ſaid, that I ought not to repine at my being ſhipwreck'd, or the ſlavery to which I had been reduc'd, ſince I had ſav'd ſo rich a treaſure. Thanks to my jewels, I was reſpected not only by the captain, but by the reſt of the officers and the whole crew, who look'd upon me as a man, that wou'd ſoon make a ſplendid figure in his own country. Another advantage I drew from my jewels, was, that they ſtampt a kind of credit on whatever I told them, concerning my adventures in the iſland of *Babilary*; for otherwiſe, I poſſibly ſhould have been thought a great liar, or at leaſt a fellow that had a rare knack at invention.

The veſſel was returning from *Macao*, an iſland ſubject to the *Chineze* empire, at the mouth of the gulf of *Quang-cheu*, where the *Portugueze*, who have a fort there, carry on an advantageous trade; which, however, is not ſo conſiderable, ever ſince the *Dutch*

Dutch drove them out of the greateſt part of *India*. Our ſhip had a rich cargo on board; and was ſtor'd with proviſions ſufficient for the voyage it was to make to *Braſil*, before it return'd back to *Lisbon*.

We had now gone about three months of our courſe, and were got into the ſea of *Paraguai*, about the 35th degree of ſouthern latitude, when the ſhip leak'd in two places. We endeavour'd to ſtop the leaks with tow, and imagin'd we had done it effectually; but the next day, we found above four foot water in the hold. Then all hands were ſet to the pump, which we ply'd for five hours together, and ſtopt the leaks better than we had done before. Nevertheleſs, as we were afraid of their opening again, and found that freſh ones broke out daily, we reſolv'd to put into an iſland, which we diſcover'd with the teleſcope, tho' we could not find it in the chart, in order to refit our veſſel.

The next day, having a very favourable gale, we got very near it, when putting

putting out the long-boat, we entred a road, and about four in the morning, found ourſelves at the mouth of a river. Having caſt anchor, five and twenty of us got into the long-boat, of whom I was one, and went about two leagues up the river. We landed, and immediately ſaw a very large plain, winding round a hill, which having aſcended, we perceiv'd a long range of huts at the foot of it. We then ſtood upon our guard, for fear leſt the inhabitants ſhould come upon us by ſurprize; and being arm'd with muskets, bayonets, piſtols and ſabres, we were well prepar'd againſt an attack.

Soon after, we perceiv'd a great number of ſavages with clubs in their hands, come out of the huts, and a little wood that lay round them. Theſe no ſooner ſaw us, but they advanc'd towards us with a menacing air, howling dreadfully at the ſame time. We then drew up in a line, and prepar'd to receive them; and being come within musket-ſhot, we immediately fir'd, and kill'd fifteen or ſixteen of them.

them. Then, ſome of them who were arm'd with bows and arrows, letting fly at us, wounded one of our comrades, but very ſlightly. We were not under the leaſt terror, but ſuffer'd them to advance within the reach of our piſtols, which we then fir'd ſo happily, that a dozen more were kill'd and as many wounded. At the ſame time, we fix'd our bayonets on our muskets, and fell upon them. They defended themſelves as well as they could with their clubs; and tho' they had by this time loſt upwards of forty men, they yet did not once flinch, but roar'd in a dreadful manner; and their cries ecchoing to a great diſtance, the ſavages ſcour'd thither from all parts, ſo that we immediately ſaw upwards of two hundred come to their aſſiſtance. Then judging it would be difficult for us to reſiſt ſo great a number, we reſolv'd to retire, which the ſavages perceiving, advanc'd towards us. Then drawing up in a kind of ſquare, we fought in our retreat for the ſpace of a quarter of a league, and kill'd

kill'd a great many more of their people, without loſing ſo much as one of our own; for as we always kept cloſe, and preſented our bayonets towards them, it was impoſſible for them to cloſe in with us.

At laſt we got to the long-boat, but with much difficulty. As I was the laſt who was ſtepping into it, and that the ſavages, tho' continually repuls'd, ſtill purſued us; I was unfortunately taken priſoner with three of my comrades; and all that thoſe who were on board the long-boat could do for us, was, to charge their pieces as quick as poſſible, and fire upon the ſavages, tho' to no purpoſe.

In the mean time, they carried us towards their habitations, howling terribly at the ſame time; where being arriv'd, their women danc'd about us, and having ſtript us to the waiſt, painted our breaſts and backs with red and blue colours. The ſame night, the ſavages who had taken us made a great feaſt, at which we were very much ſurpriz'd. But we were much more ſo, when

when ſeveral of them, after the banquet was ended, came and felt about us, ſome on our arms, others on our legs, ſome on our thighs, and others again on our ſhoulders; and at the ſame time, made a preſent to the maſter of the hut, where the entertainment was given. I was afterwards inform'd, that thoſe who felt us in this manner, beſpoke ſuch of our limbs as were moſt agreeable to their palate, in order to eat us, after knocking out our brains. Each of us had a mat given him to lie upon in the night; but the reader will eaſily ſuppoſe that neither myſelf, or any of my companions, ſlept a wink, being fully perſuaded this night would be our laſt.

Next morning, the bodies of thoſe who had been kill'd the day before, were brought in a very ceremonious manner. We then ſaw a great number of women, ſitting at the doors of their huts, crying very mournfully, and breaking into theſe words, which they repeated often: *Stulli baba coobico ſomac barahou, ſuhanahim, him him! jartana frebibachoo rabapinouficon, coortapa ſallo-*

orik,

erik, him him! Which signifies, as I learnt afterwards: *my love, my hope, charming face, eye of my soul, alas! alas! nimble leg, fine dancer, brave warrior, late in bed, awake in the morning, alas! alas!* After this sort of *Nænia* or funeral song, several savages came out of their huts, with a sorrowful and dejected air, and their eyes cast on the ground. Observing a deep silence, they seem'd to be in great affliction, and to look upon the plaintive cries and groans of the women, as unworthy their courage.

In the mean time, the women got up, and taking hands, began to dance round the dead bodies, singing mournfully several *Threni* or funeral songs. This recall'd to my memory, what I had read in † *Macrobius*, viz. that funeral songs took their rise from the notion which men had, that the soul when seperated from the body, took its flight to heaven, the place of its original, and of all the harmony which preserves the universe. For this reason,

† *In Somn. Scipi. L. 2. C. 3.*

ſon, theſe ſavages ſang in honour of their dead, and danc'd alſo in cadence, in order to imitate the regular and harmonic motion of the cœleſtial Bodies.

A little after, they beat on barks of trees, and made a great noiſe, in order, as I was ſince told, to force the ſouls of the deceas'd to remove far from their bodies, and unite with thoſe of their anceſtors. After this, one of the chiefs made a long harangue, in which he celebrated the virtues of the perſons deceas'd, and endeavour'd to comfort the ſurvivors for the loſs they had ſuſtain'd. Then they began to dig a great many round graves, in the ſhape of wells, where the bodies were buried in the ſame poſition children lie in the womb; to ſignify, that the earth is the common mother of all men; which cuſtom, *Herodotus* in his fourth book relates to have been practis'd by the *Naſamones*. In the graves were laid, ſmall loaves, *ſagamite*, tobacco, a pipe, a gourd full of oil, a comb, and ſeveral colours, with which the ſavages uſe to paint their bodies.

After the burial was over, a public feaſt was made, to which we were not invited; but ſaw them bring in all the dead dogs, that had belong'd to the deceas'd ſavages, cook'd up and dreſs'd. The feaſt being ended, one of the chiefs who preſided at the ceremony, threw a ſtick about fourteen inches long among the young fellows, which each of them endeavour'd to get hold of; knocking at the ſame time their heads one againſt the other, and ſtriking a thouſand blows with their clench'd fiſts. Another ſuch ſtick was thrown in the midſt of a company of young women, who ſtrove in the ſame manner as the men had done to get hold of it, and kick'd and cuff'd one another very luſtily. This battle, or rather funeral game, which laſted about half an hour, after having enliven'd the hearts of all the ſpectators, and baniſh'd from their minds the mournful ideas of the burial; concluded with the diſtribution of the prizes, which were given to that man and woman

man who had gain'd the victory; and this being done, they all withdrew.

All this while we were confin'd in a hut, whence we could ſee the whole ceremony. We were taken out of it, when all the ſavages arm'd with ſticks and bucklers drawing up round us, return'd us our piſtols, and gave us to underſtand they were going to knock out our brains; but that 'twas their cuſtom, to return the priſoners part of their weapons, in order that they might revenge their deaths valiantly; ſo that, with theſe weapons, we were allow'd to aſſail all ſuch as ſhould come within our reach, and exert our ſelves to the utmoſt. We then deſir'd them, ſince that was the cuſtom, to return us our ſabres; but this was refus'd, the ſabre being thought too bloody a weapon. Thoſe who had wrench'd them from us, brandiſh'd them, and were very proud of their booty.

And now each of us took powder and ball out of his pouch, and charg'd his piſtol; but the ſavages had no no-

tion of what we were about. Tho' we had kill'd ſeveral of them with our muskets and piſtols, they fancied we had hurl'd fire at them; and did not imagine it was poſſible for them to receive the leaſt hurt, with mere black duſt and little balls, unleſs fire was put into the barils.

I then ſaid to my comrades, that we muſt firſt ſhoot the four ſavages thro' the head who ſac'd us, and had got our ſabres; that at the ſame time, we muſt force them out of their hands, and ſeize their ſhields: that poſſibly, in caſe we defended ourſelves bravely; kept cloſe together, and aſſiſted one another dexterouſly, we might ſave our lives, or at leaſt loſe them with honour. They promis'd to obſerve what I recommended to them, and to fight bravely to the laſt gaſp.

We then cock'd our piſtols, and going up to the four ſavages who had our ſabres, ſhot them thro' the head, each of our piſtols being loaded with a brace and half of ball. They fell backwards, when immediately we ſeiz'd upon their

ſhields

ſhields and our own ſabres. Several other ſavages, running inſtantly to prevent our diſarming thoſe we had laid on the ground, as they were lifting up their ſticks to ſtrike us, met with the ſame fate. We now threw away our piſtols, as being of no further uſe; when ſtanding all four back to back, we put ourſelves in a poſture of defence. The ſavages ſurrounded us, and we endeavour'd to cut as many of them to pieces as we cou'd, and kill'd and wounded a conſiderable number. Some of them taking up our piſtols which lay on the ground, thought to uſe them as we had done; and fancy'd they ſhould kill us, by preſenting the muzzels to our faces, and making a noiſe with their mouths like the report of a gun; but their experiment coſt them dear, and we cleav'd them down the head with our ſabres.

But now we began to be oppreſs'd with numbers and wearineſs. Several ſavages finding they could not knock us down with their ſticks, becauſe we warded off the blows with ſo much

skill, went and fetch'd their clubs, tho' contrary to their cuſtom. But now we were ſcarce able to hold out any longer, and were going to be over-power'd, when an unexpected ſuccour reſcu'd us from danger.

Our comrades who had eſcap'd in the long-boat, carried the news of our battle on board, and the ſad fate we had met with. The captain, griev'd and exaſperated at this accident, becauſe his nephew was among the priſoners; exhorted all the crew, moſt of whom were very brave fellows, to return back; and do all that lay in their power, to reſcue us out of the hands of the ſavages. All the paſſengers, and the greateſt part of the ſailors, bravely offer'd themſelves for volunteers in this expedition. The captain told them, they muſt not be terrified at the number of the ſavages, they being ſorrily arm'd; and as they were wholly ignorant of military diſcipline, would eaſily be defeated.

Accordingly, a hundred men well arm'd, with the captain of the ſhip at their

their head, got into the long-boat, and going up the river, drew near the huts of the ſavages; who ſeeing ſo many men coming down upon them, took to their heels, and fled into the wood. In the mean time, our people advanc'd and ſet fire to their abandon'd huts. Seeing this, we went up to our companions, who were overjoy'd to ſee us; when we gave them a thouſand thanks for their great friendſhip and generoſity.

CHAP. XI.

Whilſt part of the crew is on ſhore, thoſe who ſtaid on board the veſſel, weigh anchor. The author, with ſeveral Portugueze, *is oblig'd to continue a long time in the iſland of* Mahoonam. *They make an alliance with a nation of ſavages.*

THE captain having ſent for the hatchets and ſaws which he had order'd to be put into the long-boat, commanded the ſailors to fell two great trees, that were afterwards

wards to be ſaw'd into planks to refit our veſſel. But while we were thus employ'd, under the direction of one *Oviedo* who was an excellent ſhip-carpenter; we ſaw two of our people rowing towards us in the canoo, who landing, brought us a moſt melancholy piece of news. They told us, that the thirty men whom we had left on board the veſſel, to guard it in our abſence; finding the captain and all the officers on ſhore, had conſpir'd together to ſeize the ſhip and its lading; that my casket of jewels was a ſtrong temptation; that they had weigh'd anchor and ſet ſail: that as the captain had inveſted them equally with the command of the ſhip, during his, and the officers abſence on ſhore; they had done all that lay in their power to oppoſe ſo horrid a reſolution; but ſo far from being heard, had been threatned with death: that they then jumpt into the canoo, being reſolv'd to come to us, in order that they might not be forc'd to joyn in ſo black a crime. This news threw us into a deep

conſternation,

conſternation, and as to myſelf, I very much regretted the loſs of my casket, which held all my treaſure. We had no manner of proviſions, and all we had to ſhift with was our muskets, two barrels of powder, and two bags full of leaden ball, which had been put into the long-boat; to ſerve us, in caſe our fight with the ſavages had continued longer. The only courſe we could then take, was to ſtay in the iſland, and endeavour to ſubſiſt upon what our guns could procure us. In this fatal extreme, a council was call'd; when it was reſolv'd we ſhould immediately kill what game we could, which we ſhould broil, and put on board the long-boat; and this being done, we ſhould coaſt round the iſland, and endeavour to ſettle in ſome place where we ſhou'd have nothing to fear, till ſuch time as we might meet with an opportunity for returning to *Europe*. It being impoſſible for us, as we had only the long-boat, to go ſo long a courſe; nor even to reach any part of the continent of *America*, which we concluded

concluded lay at a great diſtance from us.

Accordingly we went a ſhooting, but kept cloſe together for fear of being ſurpriz'd by the inhabitants. We kill'd game enough, which we broil'd, and feaſted upon it very heartily that evening. We ſpent the night in the wood, where, after appointing two men to watch, who were to be reliev'd every hour, we ſlept under the trees. The next morning, we put the reſt of our game on board the long-boat, and getting in her, coaſted along the iſland all that day.

About evening we went on ſhore, in a place which ſeem'd very agreeable, where we thought to ſpend the night. A brook we obſerv'd, had made us pitch upon this place. We fed, as we had done the day before, upon our broil'd victuals, and afterwards laid ourſelves down under the trees, keeping guard as uſual.

We ſlept pretty ſound, but the moment day began to appear, our watch awak'd us, and call'd to arms. Four

ſavages

ſavages had paſs'd very near them, and advanc'd forward in order to view us. We awak'd inſtantly, and taking our muskets, ran as faſt as poſſible; and ſurrounding the four ſpies, took them priſoners. Immediately we gave them to underſtand, that not a hair of their heads ſhould be hurt; and that we were reſolv'd not to injure any of the inhabitants of the iſland, provided they did not attack us: we offer'd them victuals, and having given them the higheſt teſtimonies of friendſhip, we deſir'd them to tell their countrymen, we were their friends, in caſe they were ours; and would do them all the ſervice that lay in our power. We endeavour'd to explain theſe particulars to them by ſigns, which they ſeem'd to underſtand. The ſavages overjoy'd at our kind uſage, gave us alſo to underſtand by other ſigns, that we needed not be under any apprehenſions from the natives. Upon this we diſmiſs'd them, after having given each of them the little knife we had lent them to eat with; having obſerv'd that they had view'd them

them ſeveral times with the deepeſt attention.

However, as we did not think proper to rely entirely on their word, we ſtill continued to keep guard. We advanc'd up into the country, but did not go far from the long-boat, being unwilling to leave it.

About noon, we perceiv'd a great number of ſavages coming towards us, carrying fruits and refreſhments of every kind. The moment we ſaw them, we ſaluted them as the four ſavages had ſaluted us; that is, by croſſing both our hands over our heads, and ſmiling graciouſly upon them. They return'd us the ſame ſalute at a diſtance, when coming up, they offer'd us their preſents, which we accepted, and at the ſame time embrac'd them.

We ſhew'd them our long-boat, and gave them to underſtand that we came from a far diſtant country; that our being oblig'd to ſtay in their iſland, was a very great misfortune to us; and at the ſame time intreated them to receive us as allies and brethren.

Then

Then making ſigns for us to follow them to their habitations which were not far off, we conſented to it with pleaſure.

Being come to their huts, the women and children began to dance about us; and ſoon after a kind of cake was given us to eat with meat and fruits: they alſo gave us a liquor to drink, which was agreeable enough. As we had a little brandy, we gave them a ſup of it, which pleas'd them mightily; but when we found they would have drunk too much of it, we gave them to underſtand, that to drink to exceſs of that liquor was mortal; and that they muſt take it down but very ſparingly. They believ'd us, and accordingly their chiefs commanded the reſt to leave off. The whole afternoon was ſpent in ſinging and dancing. At night, mats were given us to lie upon, and we were lodg'd all together in a large hut.

As ſeveral of us had been wounded in the laſt battle, the ſavages made ſigns that they wou'd heal them; and immediately

immediately went and call'd a man, whom they ſeem'd to look upon as a ſaint, and treated with the higheſt veneration. This extraordinary perſonage viſited our wounded men, and then ſhut himſelf up alone in a hut, which ſhook in a moſt violent manner for two or three hours, to our great aſtoniſhment; we not being able to account for it. He afterwards return'd to his patients, rinc'd his mouth, ſuck'd their wounds; and apply'd a certain herb unknown in *Europe*, which in four and twenty hours heal'd them completely. This teſtimony of the kindneſs of theſe ſavages, remov'd all ſuſpicion from our minds, and from that moment made us conſider them as our ſincere friends.

The next day, they deſir'd us to hunt along with them, and for that purpoſe offer'd to furniſh us with bows and arrows; but we gave them to underſtand, ſhewing them our muskets at the ſame time, that our weapons would do as much execution as theirs. They then view'd them attentively, and ſeem'd not to comprehend how it was poſſible

poſſible for ſuch weapons, to reach things at a diſtance. But when they ſaw us actually kill birds with them, they were prodigiouſly ſurpriz'd; and ſuppos'd, as the other ſavages of the iſland whom we fought with had done, that fire was conceal'd in the barril of our muskets, which we had the art of hurling at pleaſure; but we clear'd up their miſtake at once, by ſhewing them our powder and ball; loading two or three pieces before them, and afterwards firing them. Our confidence on this occaſion, gave them the higheſt ſatisfaction; ſo that they look'd upon us as a ſett of men of a wonderful kind, and of a ſuperior underſtanding; and were fully perſuaded we had the greateſt affection for them.

At our return from hunting, we debated in conjunction with the ſavages, whether we ſhould build a hut large enough to hold us all; or whether we ſhould raiſe ſeperate huts for each, which the wives and daughters of the ſavages ſhould look after, and dreſs our victuals; and range them all in a line,

line, in order to enlarge the village. The women, whom we alſo advis'd with upon this occaſion, were, but for what reaſon I know not, unanimouſly of the latter opinion. Accordingly, we all ſet our hands to the work; and the inhabitants, overjoy'd to ſee their village ſo much enlarg'd, work'd with us, ſo that in a month our huts were completely built and furniſh'd.

We had among us one *Rodriguez*, a *Spaniard*, who had ſpent ſeveral years in *S. Gabriel's* land. He told us, there was as great an affinity between the language of the inhabitants of that country and that of our iſlanders, as between the *Spaniſh* and *Portugueze*; that he underſtood almoſt every thing they ſaid; and that in leſs than a week, he would not only underſtand their tongue perfectly, but be able to ſpeak it ſo well as to be underſtood. As we did not know how many years we might be forc'd to reſide in this iſland; and wanted continually the aſſiſtance of the inhabitants, with whom we had contracted the ſtricteſt intima-

cy,

cy, we intreated him to apply himself to their language, so that he might be enabled to speak in our name, and be our interpreter. He promis'd to do it, and indeed in a week's time he began to speak the *Mahoonam* (for that was the name of the island) tongue; and the savages were overjoy'd to find themselves able, by this means, to talk with us. As I myself had a great talent for languages, I took it into my head, for amusement sake, to learn that of *Mahoonam*; and for this purpose, I desir'd the *Spaniard*, who had gone thro' a regular course of studies, to draw up a kind of grammar of it, and give me a few lessons from time to time. I apply'd myself to it in such a manner, that in a few months I began to have some notion of their language; and even ventur'd sometimes to speak to the savages in it, which improv'd me very much.

Assoon as our *Spaniard* was able to converse with them, he had told them our country lay at a vast distance from theirs; and that we had scour'd up and

down the ocean for many years; that we had been forc'd to put into their iſland, in order to refit our veſſel; that upon our landing, we had been attack'd by the inhabitants of the ſouthern part of the iſland, who attempted to murther us all; but that we had defeated, and made a great ſlaughter of them. That while this was doing, thoſe to whom we had entruſted our veſſel, diſappear'd on a ſudden; ſo that we had been forc'd to continue in their iſland. The *Spaniard* related our battle and victory, with ſuch an air of vanity and ſelf-ſufficiency, as very much diſpleas'd us; we therefore deſir'd him to add, that what ſlaughter we had made was involuntary; we having been abſolutely forc'd to it upon their falling upon us in ſo unjuſt and barbarous a manner, and merely to defend ourſelves.

The ſavages liſtned with the utmoſt attention to the particulars which *Rodriguez* told them; the danger to which we had been expos'd, and the victory we had gain'd. Thoſe, ſaid they, whom you conquer'd, are a wicked

wicked ſett of people; and we are very glad you puniſh'd them in ſuch a manner. We have been at war with them for many years, and perhaps *Halaimi* (which is the name of the principal god theſe inhabitants worſhip, and is undoubtedly the *Hebrew* word *Eloim* corrupted) has brought you into this iſland, purpoſely to aſſiſt us in extirpating that unjuſt nation. Be always our brethren, and we will continue yours. Live among us, as tho' you were the children of our mothers and wives; and reſt aſſur'd, we'll procure you every ſatisfaction that lies in our power.

CHAP. XII.

The author falls in love with a pretty female ſavage. His converſation with her and her father, who cenſures the manners of the Europeans.

WE accuſtom'd ourſelves inſenſibly to this ſavage way of life, and began even to reliſh it; all our time

being ſpent in drinking, eating, ſleeping and hunting; ſo that we felt no manner of uneaſineſs, except that we wou'd every now and then wiſh to reviſit our country; the dear thoughts of which, we could not poſſibly eraze from our Memory. However, in order to leſſen my uneaſineſs in this particular, and bind myſelf in ſome meaſure to the country I was in; I devoted myſelf to a young ſhe-ſavage, who was a pretty creature, of good ſenſe; whom I ſhould have married, had not our captain and all my friends, diſſuaded me from it. She lov'd me to diſtraction; and I may ſay truly, that I ſpent many a delightful hour in her company.

Whether it were that her father, who was a man of very good ſenſe, had taken a more than ordinary care of her education; or that nature had indulg'd her an uncommon ſhare of reaſon, I never met with a woman who argued on all ſubjects, in ſo juſt and acute a manner. Neither the *Babilarian* women, whoſe minds, tho'

tho' they are ſo much cultivated; nor thoſe of *England*, which are of ſo delicate a caſt, were, in my opinion, to be compar'd to that of my aimable ſavage.

I did all that lay in my power to pleaſe her, and moſt of our converſations turn'd on paradoxes with regard to gallantry; ſubjects I ſtarted, merely to amuſe and flatter her. I remember ſhe one day ask'd me, whether the women in *England* were handſomer than thoſe of that iſland. Our *Engliſh* women, ſays I, are extremely fair, and 'tis in this their principal beauty lies, if we may be allow'd to give it that name: for this fairneſs, is, in my opinion, a very trifling advantage; and I will even own, that ſince my being ſo happy as to be acquainted with you, I begin to ſuſpect whether it may not be a real deformity.

Our *Engliſh* women now abhor to ſuch a degree the natural colour of their complexions, that they do all they can to change it. Hence it is, that they cover their cheeks with a deep

red; and I imagine, that, in proceſs of time, they'll paint their faces black, the better to diſguiſe the colour of their skins. After all, if this mode ſhould happen to prevail in *Great-Britain*, our ladies will then acquire an advantage, you enjoy naturally. 'Tis a misfortune, that they're not able to ſtir out of doors, whenever the ſun ſhines; or in caſe they are abſolutely forc'd to it, are oblig'd to employ a thouſand troubleſome precautions; whereas, the ſtronger the ſun darts his rays upon you, the more charms it lights up in your countenances, as it heightens its beautiful black, and makes it ſtill more lovely. This fairneſs of our ladies, if it comes to a certain degree, has ſomething in it vaſtly flat and languid; and indeed we always prefer a brown, to a fair beauty, when the latter colour is too predominant. By this 'tis plain, that the colour which bears ſome little reſemblance to yours, or at leaſt, comes neareſt to it, pleaſes more univerſally among us.

As

As we, ſays I, like *Brunettes* more than fair women, our *Engliſh* women alſo prefer men of a deep brown complexion, more than they do ſuch as are extremely fair; a ſoft complexion denoting effeminacy, and being generally a ſign of imbecility. With regard to the various kinds of ornaments, which the women in *England* employ to heighten their beauty; I can aſſure you, there's no man among us, but ſincerely wiſhes they were as unadorn'd as you are. Our *Engliſh* women conceal a thouſand defects, under their vaſt, and ſplendid habits; which are of no other uſe, but to diſguiſe the ſhape, and impoſe upon the eye. But they have ſo little notion of their own intereſt, that they wear large pieces of ſilk wrought in folds, which deſcends from the waiſt to the foot; and enormous circles of whalebone cover'd with linnen, which makes them look like big-belly'd women, juſt ready to cry out. They ſtrut in the midſt of theſe moveable hoops, which ſurround them perpetually, like children when you teach them to walk

in go-carts; and these they push forward, or backwards according as they please to direct their motions.

I beg pardon of our *English* ladies, for presuming to relate the answer I made to my pretty female savage's question. A lover always fancies his mistress exceeds all other women in beauty; and as mine was of a jetty black, and cloath'd in no other dress but the plain summer habit, which the savages in those countries wear all the year round; decency and good manners oblig'd me to prefer her complexion and habit, to those of our *European* women. If any of these should happen to be shock'd at it, I beseech them to ascribe it to the sincerity of a traveller, who is resolv'd not to disguise or omit the most minute circumstance.

Abenouſſakee her father, was, as I before observ'd, a man of excellent sense; but of that sense which nature herself indulges, unrefin'd by the passions. As I frequently visited his hut, attracted by

by his daughter's charms, I us'd to diſcourſe with him now and then; and our converſations were perhaps not inferiour to *Plato's dialogues*. For what reaſon, ſays he to me one day, as we were walking together, whilſt our *Portugueze* were hunting with the ſavages; for what reaſon, did you and the reſt of the *Europeans* leave the country where nature thought fit to place you; and hazard the few days you are allow'd to live, upon the ocean? Were it not better to ſpend them with your family, or in the company of your friends; and employ yourſelf in hunting, that agreeable as well as uſeful exerciſe? Had you devoted yourſelf to ſuch a way of life, you would not have been expos'd to all the perils and misfortunes, which an idle curioſity has made you undergo.

'Tis true, ſays I, that the ſole motive of my leaving my native country, and going to ſea, was a ſtrong curioſity to viſit diſtant regions; and to know the different nations which are diſpers'd up and down the earth. But then, as

I have undergone many hardſhips; and been expos'd to the greateſt dangers in this voyage, I alſo have had the pleaſure of ſeeing a thouſand curious objects: I ſhall always thank providence, for having conducted me into the iſland of *Babilary* and that of *Tilibet*; of which I have related many particulars, that both pleas'd and ſurpriz'd you.

What you have told me, ſays he, of your own country, is equally ſurprizing, and has diverted me full as much. But, after all, I cannot conceive how men ſhould put themſelves to the trouble, merely for the pleaſure of enquiring into the manners and cuſtoms of other nations, to build huge floating huts; and be ſo raſh, as to brave ſtorms and tempeſts, and undergo ſo many hardſhips.

I was young, ſays I, when I left my native country, and will own that I went abroad, merely out of a vain curioſity; but thoſe who built the veſſel, and the crew who were on board with me, were prompted by more ſubſtantial and rational motives. Their

buſineſs,

buſineſs, ſays I, was to trade, and bring back goods from foreign countries, which being ſold at their return, would produce a conſiderable ſum of money. I continued to tell him, we labour'd all our lives, purely to get this money, and amaſs as much of it as we could; and made ourſelves truly miſerable, in hopes of being one day happy, from a perſuaſion we entertain'd, that money only could make us ſo.

What is this ſame money, ſays the ſavage, which has the virtue to make you happy, the moment you poſſeſs it? See, ſays I, ſhewing him a piece of gold and another of ſilver, which I had kept for ſome time in my pocket; 'tis this procures us the ſeveral neceſſaries of life, and furniſhes us with all the conveniencies and delights we can poſſibly wiſh for. The poſſeſſion of theſe two metals, regulates ranks and degrees among us; creates eſteem and veneration; and has even the wonderful faculty of beſtowing merit and good ſenſe.

Abenouſſakee,

Abenouſſakee, obſerving figures and characters ſtampt on my gold and ſilver pieces, fancied they contain'd a certain magical virtue; and therefore deſir'd me to lend him one of them to make an experiment with, and ſee whether it could really inſpire his ſon, who, he ſaid, was a very ſilly boy, with good ſenſe. I'll try, ſays he, whether you don't impoſe upon me; and if that piece has the power you aſcribe to it.

It would not, ſays I, have the leaſt effect upon him, tho' he had as many of them as would fill the largeſt of your huts. What, ſays he, interrupting me, have theſe pieces no virtue but in your country? No, ſays I; and the reaſon of it is, becauſe we, by agreement, aſſign to them certain ideas which it is impoſſible for you ever to entertain: as for inſtance, when a great number of theſe pieces are in a cheſt, we fancy it contains ſpacious fields, commodious edifices, ſplendid furniture, magnificent habits, honours, dignities, a croud of ſervants, beautiful women and delicious viands. One circumſtance which will

will aſtoniſh you, is, that we no ſooner open the cheſt, but we, whenever we think proper, really find all thoſe particulars in it. Then, by acquiring theſe things, which are in ſome meaſure worſhip'd in our country, becauſe they are ſo ardently thirſted after, we procure eſteem; are rever'd, and courted by every individual; and every one cries up our merit, wit and ſenſe.

Abenouſſakee, who had not the leaſt idea of this ænigma, imagin'd I only told him a ſett of fictions, purely to impoſe upon his credulity. However, when I afterwards clear'd up the paradox, he told me, that to him, our manners appear'd very contemptible; and that tho' gold and ſilver might have been originally uſeful, thoſe metals were yet of pernicious conſequence, by our unreaſonable abuſe of them; whence he concluded, that ſince we were oblig'd to take ſo much pains and labour; and ſo idly made our felicity entirely dependant on a thing that was not in our power, we were unhappy by choice, and deſerv'd to be ſo. Happi-

neſs,

neſs, ſays he, conſiſts in deſiring nothing, but your whole life is ſpent in deſiring. As for us, we enjoy all things, becauſe we want nothing we wiſh for.

But as thoſe men among you, ſays he, who poſſeſs a much greater quantity of money than the reſt, ſee themſelves eſteem'd and rever'd upon that account; does not this puff them up with a ridiculous pride, and prompt them to deſpiſe all who are not ſo wealthy as themſelves? Yes, ſays I, this indeed is commonly the caſe. A rich man is generally a very ſilly fellow, unadorn'd with one ſingle virtue or talent: but this is a trifle; for he fondly imagines that his poſſeſſions ſupply every defect, and give him an indiſputable ſuperiority over the man of ſenſe and merit, who tho' not in good circumſtances, yet does not ſue for any favour at his hands. If theſe two happen to be together, the one, tho' he condeſcends to pay the greateſt civilities to the other, he yet does not ſpeak to him as tho' he were his equal. But if the man of merit is ſo

unhappy,

unhappy, as to diſcover his indigence by the meanneſs of his dreſs, this is of worſe conſequence to him, than if his reputation were ſullied. Poverty, in the eye of a rich man, is the moſt diſhonourable of all qualities, and the moſt ridiculous thing in nature.

Another aſtoniſhing circumſtance, is, that a wealthy man, who was once poor, and long pining in miſery, as multitudes are, is generally the moſt impertinent, the moſt inſupportable of all rich men. He forgets the meanneſs of his extraction and his once low condition of life; but never his education, for this ſhapes his manners and behaviour. In fine, thoſe rich upſtarts, whom we call men of fortune, generally diſtinguiſh themſelves from the nobles, and ſuch whoſe poſſeſſions are antient and hereditary; and are always diſcover'd by the marks above-mention'd. Theſe ſalute thoſe they meet, who always pay them the compliment firſt, with a careleſs nod; and ſmile at the ſame time with an air of ſatisfaction, or diſcover an abſence of thought;

they

they ſpeak very loud, and very improperly: all their furniture is made after the laſt mode that prevail'd; they entertain perſons of high birth and quality with the utmoſt magnificence, tho' they are forbid their tables; and are profuſe to their miſtreſſes only. As virtue never enriches the poſſeſſor, and that theſe men generally owe their fortune to guilt; they never pay homage to the deity, well knowing they are obnoxious to him, unleſs hypocriſy can be of any advantage to them; and then indeed they will addreſs him, but 'tis merely to impoſe upon the public. They are aſham'd of their own names, and generally ſhade it with a magnificent ſirname; and endeavour to make the world forget what themſelves or their fathers once were, by a parti-colour'd cloud of ſervants, who are for ever at their heels.

Explain, ſays *Abenouſſakee*, interrupting me, what you mean by the word *ſervant*. Has money the virtue to increaſe the number of your children? Our children, ſays I, never wait upon their

their parents, unleſs they are extremely poor. All people in tolerable circumſtances give money to men and women, whom they keep in their houſes, and provide with neceſſaries, to perform the very loweſt and moſt contemptible offices; theſe are oblig'd to do whatever they are commanded; are ſubject to the whim and caprice of their maſters and miſtreſſes, and dare not diſobey them. Are not theſe people, ſays he, of another country, and priſoners of war? No, ſays I, they are born among us, but wanting that thing I juſt now ſpoke of, call'd money, ſubject themſelves to us; and become in ſome meaſure our ſlaves, merely to acquire ſo ſmall a portion of it, as may be neceſſary for their ſubſiſtance.

Is it poſſible, ſays *Abenouſſakee*, there ſhould be men among you, of ſo abject and groveling a caſt of mind; ſome to make themſelves ſlaves to their countrymen, and others to ſuffer them to be ſo? I ſee that money is your enemy, ſince it reduces you to a ſtate of captivity, and ſubjects you to ſuch as poſſeſs

it. It muſt be confeſs'd, ſays I, money is a kind of tyrant; and 'tis a great misfortune to us, that we ſhould be born with the want of the ſeveral neceſſaries of life.

Your country, then, ſays he, is either too ſmall for you, or you are overſtock'd with people, ſince it cannot ſupply them with food; and that ſome of them either cannot live in it, or are forc'd to ſubſiſt by the moſt baſe and unworthy methods. I anſwer'd, that our country was very fruitful, and could ſubſiſt twice as many inhabitants; but that there was a ſett of powerful men among us, who had ſeiz'd upon the greateſt part of our lands; and having left none for the reſt, theſe were oblig'd to work day and night for the former, in order to procure themſelves the common neceſſaries of life.

Abenouſſakee then enquir'd, whether thoſe potent perſons, who thus triumph'd, were more numerous than ſuch of their countrymen, as were forc'd to lead ſuch abject and miſerable lives. I anſwer'd, that the poor exceeded infinitely

nitely the rich in number. If this be ſo, ſays he, your poor people muſt have little ſenſe, or elſe are cowards, to ſuffer a number of rich men, who are much fewer than themſelves, to ſeize upon all, and leave them nothing. The laws, ſays I, prevent their doing this. What are theſe *laws*, ſays the ſavage, interrupting me? Are they men arm'd with muskets and ſabres, who ſerve as a guard to the wealthy, in order to maintain them in the quiet poſſeſſion of their riches; and defend them againſt the juſt pretenſions of the poor.

The laws, ſays I, are public rules and maxims, receiv'd among us from time immemorial, which are equally rever'd both by rich and poor, becauſe we conſider them as the bond and ſecurity of civil ſociety. Both parties therefore unite to maintain them, and ſee them duly executed; ſo that a poor fellow, for inſtance, who ſhould rob a rich man, would be puniſh'd with the utmoſt ſeverity. Not only the rich would call aloud for puniſhment, but

all the poor would approve of it, and even ſome of them would themſelves be the executioners upon theſe occaſions. 'Tis no wonder, as you may perceive, that the rich ſhould revenge an attempt like this; and call ſuch an action, groveling, ſhameful, and criminal, as it really is. But you poſſibly may be ſurpriz'd, that the poor ſhould condemn this action equally with the rich, ſince it effects theſe much more. But two motives engage them to deteſt it, in caſe they have the leaſt probity or honour; and conſequently to maintain the Great in the poſſeſſion of the riches they may have got, by what methods ſoever. The firſt is, that were the poor man allow'd to ſeize upon the treaſures of the rich; he alſo might be diſpoſſeſs'd, by a rich man, or another who is as poor as himſelf, of the little he enjoys; and conſequently, 'tis his intereſt to ſupport the law, which forbids every kind of theft. The ſecond motive, is grounded on a famous principle of morality, which is look'd upon as the baſis

ſis of all civil ſociety; and that is, not to do to another, what we ſhould be unwilling to have done to ourſelves: ſo that the poor man, conſcious he himſelf ſhould be very ſorry to be diſpoſſeſs'd of what he might have got by his labour; forbears, in order not to vex the rich man, to rob him of any thing, tho' of the moſt trifling value.

We allow equally with you, ſays *Abenouſſakee*, this moral principle of all juſtice, which is born with us, and is ever imprinted on our minds, how deprav'd ſoever we may be; but methinks 'tis not, according to your notions, and what you juſt now told me, ſo pure and ſacred as according to ours. Your way of life, and what you call civil ſociety, makes you obey it with ſuch partiality, as ſullies its beauty; ſince, purſuant to your manners and cuſtoms, 'tis manifeſtly more favourable to ſome than it is to others. 'Tis an eaſy matter for a wealthy man to ſay, I am very rich, and ſhould be very ſorry to be bereav'd of my poſ-

ſeſſions; conſequently I muſt not diſpoſſeſs other men of their riches. Whereas the poor man who wants every thing, can only ſay thus: Had I wealth, I ſhould be ſorry to be diſpoſſeſs'd of it; conſequently I muſt not ſeize upon that of others. Obſerve the difference there is between the *I am* of the rich, and the *Had I* of the poor man; and you'll confeſs that the principle is applied in a very different manner among you; whence 'tis plain, that this morality is defective, becauſe 'tis partial, ſince it is not equal and uniform with regard to all men and all conditions; the rich and poor being oblig'd to argue differently.

Whatever you may ſuggeſt, ſays I, this law of nature is equally rever'd by us all: by this, order is maintain'd in all governments; every one ſubmits, and no one dares to complain againſt it. It muſt indeed be confeſs'd, that 'tis not always religiouſly obſerv'd; for the poor man frequently ſteals the property of the rich; and on the other ſide, the rich man not only ſeizes ſometimes

the

the poſſeſſions of the rich, but endeavours to force away whatever the needy man may have got by his labours. But in this caſe, if the law be infring'd, 'tis immediately reveng'd; however, with this difference, that the poor fellow never fails of being puniſh'd according to the enormity of his crimes, whereas the rich man ſometimes eludes the courſe of juſtice.

Wherefore, ſays the ſavage, interrupting me, is this ſhameful diſtinction made? 'Tis, ſays I, becauſe the opulent are generally the arbiters and diſpenſers of juſtice among us, and commonly favour thoſe who are wealthy like themſelves; whence it often happens, that when a poor man is oppreſt, he chuſes to ſtifle his complaints rather than publiſh them to the world. However, thoſe awful miniſters of juſtice, whom we call magiſtrates, naturally incline to give each man his due, when nothing claſhes with the notions they have form'd to themſelves of equity: but then, on the other ſide, as 'tis natural to love one's ſelf beſt; whenever it ſo

happens that their paſſions may be gratified by ſwerving a little from juſtice, they are apt to indulge them. If, for inſtance, a pretty woman ſues for any thing at their hands, the firſt motion infallibly pleads in her favour; but happily, the ſecond ſometimes declares for truth and equity. They are generally check'd by the fear of infamy; however, there are certain circumſtances where fear does not take place, which is, when iniquity may be conceal'd: in this caſe, woe to him who has only reaſon on his ſide; and is deſtitute of all protection but that of juſtice or innocence! Were not men, ſays I, aw'd by heaven, this enormity would be much greater than it is; but our religion, whoſe precepts agree with thoſe of the law of nature, makes us look upon double-dealing or prevarication in a judge, as the blackeſt of all crimes; ſo that, if a magiſtrate ſtands but in ſome little awe of the Divine Being, he never pronounces againſt the dictates of his conſcience; but ſometimes his conſcience is of ſuch

a caſt, that one wou'd be apt to conclude he had none at all.

Here the ſavage ask'd me, whether conſcience did not comprehend all our laws. As conſcience, ſays I, is not a curb ſufficient to reſtrain ſuch as are prompted to guilt; and that thoſe who commit evil, eaſily flatter themſelves at the ſame time that they are innocent; we have a vaſt number of laws, which prohibit the commiſſion of a multitude of things, whence an infinite number of deciſions ariſe from innumerable caſes, which inflict different puniſhments on thoſe who tranſgreſs them. Of what uſe, ſays *Abenouſſakee*, are ſo many enacted laws, ſince you are inform'd with that of nature, which is ſo plain, ſo deciſive? Our laws, ſays I, are no other than that of nature, extended and applied to various kinds of particular caſes.

But, ſays I, notwithanding the wiſdom of our legiſlators, and the ſagacity of our interpreters, there is among us a certain furious wide-gaping monſter, which is protected and cheriſh'd by

by a croud of *long robes*, who feed this monſter, and are mutually fed by it; it laughs at juſtice, devours the ſubſtance of families, and endeavours to aboliſh or elude all laws in general.

The name of this dangerous monſter is *Chicane* or *Cavil*, a monſter infinitely more formidable than injuſtice itſelf; for this, when it oppreſſes us openly, leaves us at leaſt the vindictive right of breathing our complaints. But this *Chicane* is ſo envelop'd in its numberleſs folds, and ſo ſubtile in its quirks and evaſions; that favour'd by certain formalities, which are ſo many chains we have been pleas'd to bind juſtice with; this monſter makes us loſe every thing thro' the oracles of the judges, even the conſolation of being allow'd to ſay, they were partial in their deciſions. The dreadful miniſters of *Chicane* croud all the courts of juſtice; enflame them by the perpetual fire they keep in theſe places; and make them eccho inceſſantly with their piercing cries, which yet are not always loud enough to wake the judges from their ſlumbers: an unhappy

happy circumſtance is, that the old judges only ſleep, and the young ones keep awake.

It muſt be confeſs'd, ſays I, that juſtice is more rever'd, and perhaps better adminiſter'd among the ſavages, than by us. Upon my mentioning the word *ſavage*, which happen'd to drop from me unawares, *Abenouſſakee* interrupted me, and enquir'd the meaning of it, and why I call'd him *ſavage*? The reaſon is, ſays I, becauſe you and your countrymen are not like us, poliſh'd and civiliz'd; that you live in a ſtate of independance, and follow merely inſtinct; that you obſerve but very few rules of decorum; that you have no notion of what we call good breeding, all which are laws of ſuch mighty conſequence among us, that we almoſt put them on the ſame foot with thoſe of nature; in fine, becauſe you go naked, and are not like us, govern'd by kings aud magiſtrates.

How great is your blindneſs, ſays *Abenouſſakee*! What! becauſe we content ourſelves with following inſtinct;

ſtinct; and are unacquainted with all laws, but thoſe which nature dictates, you call us ſavages! You fancy yourſelves more improv'd, more poliſh'd, and more civiliz'd than we, becauſe a thouſand arbitrary inſtitutions, to which you have ſacrific'd your liberty, prevail among you! As for us, who ſtill preſerve ours, and conſider it as the moſt valuable gift that nature has beſtow'd on man; we ſhould think it loſt, were we ſubject to that multitude of ſuperfluous rules, upon which your civil ſociety is grounded. Whatever you may fancy, methinks our ſociety is much more civiliz'd than yours, becauſe 'tis more ſimple and equitable; we don't ſuffer the leaſt injuſtice or partiality in this ſociety; we think all mankind upon a level, becauſe nature has made them ſo, and as we don't preſume to change the order ſhe has eſtabliſh'd; we obey our fathers, and revere old men, who having more experience, are conſequently more judicious than young men. Nature, you ſee, only, has eſtabliſh'd this precedency

cy among us. We have a chief, who always is elected; and the reaſon of ſuch elections, is, becauſe we have obſerv'd, that tho' all men are equal in dignity, there is nevertheleſs a vaſt difference among the ſeveral individuals, with regard to genius, talents, bravery, and bodily ſtrength.

As nature, ſays he, herſelf made this diſtinction among her children, ſhe therefore dictates that we conform to it; and conſequently to ſet at our head, that man among us to whom ſhe has been moſt liberal of her favours. Is this, ſays I, the rule you obſerve, in the aſcribing of honours, and the diſtinguiſhing of ranks? With regard to all your laws of decorum, as they are ſuggeſted by caprice, they ſerve only to foment your pride and depravity, and ſooth all your paſſions. In the manner you ſeem to live among yourſelves, what you call politeneſs and good-breeding, is in reality falſhood and diſſimulation. You lay one another under the greateſt conſtraint, purely to deceive; and this aſſiduous care is a

continual

continual ſlavery, you reduce yourſelves to. You look upon a thouſand particulars, as the moſt important duties of life, tho' it be as juſt to omit, as comply with them.

Do you, ſays he, pretend to be more civiliz'd than we, becauſe you are cloath'd? But were we born in a climate, that lay at a great diſtance from the ſun, d'ye think we ſhould not take as much care to cover our bodies as you do? We content ourſelves with concealing that from ſight which nature has appointed for the continuation of our ſpecies; and this we do to prevent our eye from growing too familiar with objects, which, were they continually expos'd to ſight, would therefore be leſs pleaſing. We are ignorant of ſuch arts as owe their invention to neceſſity, and the fantaſtic inequality of your ſtations. For what man among you, that cou'd ſubſiſt without labour, would give himſelf the trouble to work? Theſe arts therefore you glory ſo much in, are ſo many teſtimonies of the wretchedneſs of

your

your condition; and as they produce arbitrary conveniences, or ſuperfluous commodities only, we are far from envying them; we deſire nothing but what we are acquainted with, and this alone is ſufficient to make us happy.

In a word, ſays he, we never ſee a man among us ſue to another for ſubſiſtence; work for him as a hireling, or wait upon him after a mean, groveling manner. Our women till our lands, which are in common; and the labour we beſtow upon them, intitles us to whatever they produce. Our bows and arrows are an agreeable amuſement; and give us an opportunity of ſpending our lives without the leaſt care or ſolicitude. We are ignorant of your art of building great huts on ſea or land: we are very well ſatisfy'd to live beneath our own, and never once entertain a thought of quitting the iſland we inhabit. We have only ſmall canoos made of the barks of trees, with which we coaſt the iſland, and go up and down our rivers. If our huts

chance

chance to fall to the ground, they are rebuilt with very little labour. All things grow in our iſland, becauſe we conſider every thing as uſeleſs that does not grow in it. Obſerve now the difference that is between you and us, and which may with the greateſt propriety be call'd *ſavages*. Do you imagine, that the man who follows the ſteps which nature has pointed out, is more ſavage than he who leaves them to follow art? Are thoſe trees in our iſland, which without the leaſt culture or care, bring forth the delicious fruits you eat with ſuch a reliſh, juſt as they come from the hand of nature, to be call'd *ſavage?* Do you ſet a greater value on theſe plants, which will not bring forth fruit unleſs they are dreſs'd and cultivated? If you do this, I then indeed will allow you to conſider yourſelves as ſuperior to us.

I yet don't, ſays he, tho' we plead for plain and uncorrupted nature, pretend to aſſert that we always keep ſtrictly to her ſacred maxims; or that our manners are conſtantly pure, and all

our

our cuſtoms irreproachable. We are inform'd with the ſame paſſions as the *Europeans*; and as theſe paſſions deprave the rational faculties, they conſequently corrupt nature. As for inſtance, we are too cruel to our enemies. This is a vice of long ſtanding, which has taken very deep root in our minds, tho' cuſtom and prejudice conceal its deformity from us; but Poſſibly we may one day open our eyes.

I was highly delighted with the great wiſdom which ſhone forth in *Abenouſſakee's* diſcourſe; and tho' his reaſons ſhock'd my vanity, I yet could not forbear applauding them. I was for ſome time ſo wrapt up in thought, that I did not make a word of anſwer to what he ſaid laſt, which engag'd him to ſpeak as follows. Don't fancy, *Gulliver*, that I'm angry becauſe you call'd me ſavage; ſince in caſe you had, out of reſpect for me, forbore to employ that word, you always wou'd have thought me ſo; and I ſhou'd never have had an opportunity of undeceiving you in that particular.

I am ſenſible that ſelf-love prompts us to love our own country beſt; and therefore I freely forgive you, for preferring your nation to ours.

As we were thus talking, we found ourſelves inſenſibly at the end of our walk, and thereupon went back to our huts, where we found our companions with ſeveral of the inhabitants return'd from hunting, loaded with game, which we ſhar'd with them. The women dreſs'd it, and I feaſted in *Abenouſſakee*'s hut to which ſeveral of the hunters had been invited, as agreeably, as I could have done in *England* in the midſt of my friends. The entertainment being ended, we all took the * *Calumet*, and regal'd ourſelves with it till very late at night.

CHAP.

* *A ſort of large pipe, made of red, white or black marble, to ſmoak in. The bowl of it is very ſmooth, and is in the ſhape of a battle-ax. The tube is ſett with porcupine's quills &c; 'Tis ſuppos'd by the ſavages to be of a myſterious nature, and is the emblem of peace.*

CHAP. XIII.

Battle between the Kiſtrimaux *and* Taouaous. *The latter, being aſſiſted by the* Portugueze, *are victorious. The author makes a ſpeech, to diſſuade the ſavages from putting the priſoners to death. A peace is concluded between the two nations.*

ABout this time we were told, that the *Kiſtrimaux*, or ſavages againſt whom we had fought upon our firſt landing in the iſland, who had long been at enmity with the *Taouaous*, for ſo the ſavages among whom we liv'd were call'd, had lately laid waſte ſome of their lands; and were advanc'd in great numbers, in order to ſet fire to their huts, and to kill, or carry off all the *Taouaous* they could meet with. We offer'd our ſervice to our allies upon this occaſion, and deſir'd we might be permitted to aſſiſt them in repulſing their enemies, who had already felt the fury of our arms. The *Taouaous* having accepted our offer with thanks, we order'd them

to assemble on the morrow, in order to be taught the art of fighting, which we told them, would give them a great advantage over their enemies. They agreed that our captain should head them, promising to obey all his orders, and submit in the engagement to such of the *Europeans* as he should appoint for officers under him. Our whole army, the *Europeans* included, consisted of nine hundred men. The first thing our general did, was to exercise the savages for some days; however, he did not flatter himself, that it would be possible for him, to make them as expert in military discipline as ourselves; when having done this for some days, and thinking them sufficiently instructed, he led them forth against the enemy. Our savages were arm'd with bows and arrows, and hatchets made of a black stone as hard as iron; and the *Europeans* with muskets, pistols and bayonets. We had not march'd a league, before we arriv'd at the foot of a hill, where our general, accompanied by his nephew and myself, went up to view the enemy,

enemy, whom our ſcouts ſaid were encamp'd in the plain. We diſcover'd them at about half a league diſtance from us, and judg'd, by the manner in which they had poſted themſelves, that they were ſtronger than we; for they had extended their wings to a great length, in order to ſurround us; having probably been inform'd that our army was very inconſiderable. They alſo had the advantage of the ground; for a very thick wood cover'd them on the left, and a large rivulet lay on their right. Our general, after having attentively conſider'd the poſture of the enemy, chang'd that of his own army, and drew it up in manner following. As it was impoſſible to fall upon them in flank; and that it was very eaſy for them to ſurround us, becauſe of their great numbers, had we attack'd them in front; he divided his army into three battalions. The firſt was commanded by *Cuniga* a *Portugueze*, a man of great bravery and moſt conſummate experience, who had ſerv'd on the frontiers of *Portugal* under the lord *Galway*, in

the laſt war of the allies againſt *France*; this body conſiſted of two hundred ſavages, and twenty five *Portugueze*. The ſecond battalion was commanded by the captain's nephew, and was form'd of the ſame number as that of *Cuniga*. The third battalion conſiſted of four hundred ſavages and fifty *Portugueze*, among whom I march'd, and was commanded by our general.

We advanc'd in this order, and perceiv'd that the *Kiſtrimaux* had ſtill enlarg'd their wings. We halted, in order to ſee whether they would advance and attack us; but obſerving they kept their ground, we march'd towards the enemy, within twice the length of a muſket-ſhot, when they began to howl in a moſt dreadful manner. *Cuniga* and the captain's nephew began the attack on different ſides, and our general ſent them reinforcements, whenever he found it neceſſary. Seeing that his nephew's battalion, was forc'd to fight in retiring, he commanded me to reinforce him with a detachment of a hundred ſavages and twenty five *Portugueze*.

Our

Our ſabres, and the fire of our muskets, chang'd the ſcene; for the captain's nephew and his battalion taking heart, he charg'd the ſavages with freſh fury, and we made a great ſlaughter of them. They did not flinch, tho' they labour'd under the greateſt diſadvantage: on the contrary, their courage ſeem'd to break out with greater vigour, the more we cut them to pieces. *Cuniga* and his men perform'd wonders, and that brave man made a great havock of the enemy's left wing, whilſt we repuls'd the right. The *Taouaous* diſcover'd an uncommon joy, when they ſaw us fight ſo bravely for them and their country: but to do them juſtice, they behav'd with extraordinary valour.

In the mean time, the general, who now was under no farther apprehenſions of being ſurrounded, advanc'd forward againſt the enemy. Then it was that the battle was bloody. The *Kiſtrimaux*, tho' they had loſt a great number of men, did not once offer to fly; but fought with ſo much

intrepidity and reſolution, as would ſtill have made the victory doubtful, had they engag'd the *Taouaous* only. We heard them cry out one to another, *Can, obami paru, nate iris mikio*; which ſignifies, *Let us then die, ſince we muſt yield.* Very few eſcap'd alive out of the battle, and we took a great number of priſoners.

After this victory, in which we had ſo great a ſhare, the *Taouaous* could no longer doubt but we were their ſincere friends, and accordingly gave us a thouſand thanks. But whilſt they were thus employ'd, in congratulating one another upon their good ſucceſs; *Abenouſſakee*, who had not left me during the battle, bid me obſerve the cruelty of his countrymen, who, in cold blood, murther'd all the wounded among the enemy; and, at the ſame time, obſerv'd to me, that he was greatly ſhock'd at their barbarity. In the mean time, they began to think of returning home; and it was neceſſary to dreſs the wounds of our ſoldiers, of whom there were great numbers.

I

I myſelf had been ſlightly wounded in the ſhoulder, with a hatchet which had juſt graz'd it. My pretty female ſavage, would not ſuffer any perſon to dreſs my wound but herſelf; and accordingly ſhe went and gather'd ſome plants whoſe virtues ſhe knew, and applying them to the wound, it was heal'd in a very ſhort time.

Night being come, we were order'd to aſſemble in the large hut, where a grand ſupper was provided for us, to which the priſoners were invited. They eat as heartily as we did, and did not ſeem the leaſt dejected at their hard fate. We all ſeperated after ſupper, and agreed to meet in the ſame place on the morrow.

Being aſſembled the next day, one of the chiefs advanc'd towards us, and asked whether we would have the priſoners burnt, or were for having their brains daſh'd out? He added, with a very polite air, that ſince we had contributed ſo much to the victory, they ought to beſtow on us the

the honour of having the chief hand in puniſhing the priſoners.

Saying this, he preſented our captain with a club and a torch, purpoſely that he might ſignify by his choice, what kind of death the priſoners ſhou'd die. The reader will naturally ſuppoſe, that our captain refus'd to accept of this terrible honour. At that inſtant recollecting how I myſelf had once been in the dreadful condition of thoſe unhappy wretches, I addreſs'd the aſſembled ſavages in theſe words.

" Is it poſſible, O generous *Tacuaous*, " for men who boaſt ſo much wiſdom, un- " derſtanding and virtue, to be ſo inhu- " man? Is it not enough that you have " vanquiſh'd your formidable enemies; " humbled their pride; put them to " flight; and cover'd with their de- " feated battalions, the bloody plain " where you behaved in ſo gallant a " manner? The ſlaughter is at an " end; muſt therefore a company of " unhappy vanquiſh'd people, who eſ- " cap'd the fury of your arms in bat-

" tle,

" tle, be now, after the victory is o-
" ver, ſo many victims of your rage?
" Why did you not cut them all to
" pieces in the field, when they had
" their weapons in their hands, and
" were able to defend themſelves?
" How can you think it glorious, to
" put to death an enemy after you
" have diſarm'd him? If, by ſparing
" the lives of theſe unhappy men, you
" intended them merely to grace your
" triumph; why don't you make this
" triumph ſtill more laſting, by ex-
" tending your mercy to thoſe you
" conquer'd; who, ſo long as they
" draw breath, will, in ſpight of
" themſelves, be forc'd to publiſh
" your glory and their own defeat?
" How many advantages will your
" clemency on this occaſion procure
" you? The fate of arms is various
" and inconſtant: and therefore, in
" caſe your enemies ſhould one day be
" victorious, and thoſe of your nation
" ſo unfortunate as to fall into their
" hands; you then may propoſe an
" advantageous exchange, and pro-

" cure

" cure their liberty; conſequently the
" ſaving of their lives, will in ſome
" meaſure be ſaving your own. But
" I am ſenſible, O generous *Taouacus*,
" that your magnanimous hearts will
" look upon this conſideration as tri-
" fling; your great ſouls muſt be mov'd
" by more nobler motives, and more wor-
" thy objects. Let then your generoſity
" now appear, in an action which is ſo
" worthy of it. Don't imagine that
" the abolition of this barbarous cuſtom,
" ſo repugnant to virtue and good ſenſe,
" is ſufficient; or that 'tis enough barely
" to ſave the lives of ſo many unfortunate
" warriors, who are not in a capacity to
" annoy you. Go ſtill farther; give
" them their liberty, and generouſly ſend
" them back to their countrymen, who,
" ſtruck with the heroiſm of this action,
" will be forc'd to own, that your cou-
" rage is great, but your virtue ſtill grea-
" ter; and will by this action, be no leſs
" prompted by gratitude and eſteem,
" to ſue for your friendſhip. Can any
" thing be more valuable than peace?
" War ſhould never be undertaken

" but

" but in the view of obtaining it: Now
" peace, which generally is the price
" of blood; may, on this occaſion, be
" procur'd by your forbearing to ſhed
" it. This liberty you are ſo jealous of,
" which is ſo often hazarded in war,
" will be ſecur'd to you for ever, if
" you indulge it to thoſe who are now
" in your power. In caſe your ene-
" mies ſhould be ſo injudicious, as not
" to applaud ſo magnanimous an acti-
" on; they at leaſt will be oblig'd to
" ſuppoſe, that you have them in the
" higheſt contempt, ſince you are not
" afraid of increaſing their numbers,
" by ſending theſe back alive: and
" this confeſſion, at the ſame time that it
" fills them with confuſion, will tran-
" ſmit your glory to lateſt poſterity.

As ſoon as I had ended my ſpeech, *Abe-nouſſakee*, for whom his countrymen had the higheſt veneration, roſe up, and turning towards them, ſaid, that he had long condemn'd, in his heart, this barbarous cuſtom I then exhorted them to aboliſh: that nothing could be more contradictory to the virtue they profeſs'd; that

'twas

'twas a people's glory, not to oppreſs, but vanquiſh a nation; that the deſtroying them any otherwiſe than in the field, was baſe and groveling: and that 'twas inhuman to make warriors ſuffer a cruel death; warriors who were taken in battle, and reduc'd to a ſtate of ſlavery, merely becauſe they fought valiantly: that, as they ow'd their victory to the bravery of the *Europeans*, it was but juſt, at leaſt on this occaſion, that all the priſoners ſhould be given them, to be diſpos'd of as they thought proper.

Immediately a murmuring ſound was heard among the ſavages, who began to debate upon my ſpeech, and *Abenouſſakee*'s diſcourſe. The women, being of a more cruel and revengeful temper than the men, did not much reliſh my arguments, but inſiſted ſtrenuouſly for the antient cuſtom, and were unanimous to have the priſoners put to death. However, notwithſtanding all they could ſay, *Abenouſſakee*'s advice prevail'd; and it was reſolv'd that they ſhould all be put into our hands,

hands, to be diſpos'd of as we ſhould ſee fitting. Immediately they were taken out of the hut in which they were confin'd, when ſuppoſing they were going to be put to death, they firſt ask'd for their hatchets, according to the uſual cuſtom, in order to revenge their deaths. Finding themſelves afterwards deliver'd up to the *Europeans*, they look'd ſternly upon us, and began to revile us in a moſt outrageous manner. They ſaid, by way of bravado, that had not the powerful dæmon who was propitious to us, fill'd our long tubes with a liquid and impetuous fire, they would eaſily have cut us all to pieces; and that we were a company of mean-ſpirited wretches, ſince we had employ'd more art than bravery in the fight.

One of the chiefs of the *Kiſtrimaux*, who was among the priſoners, recollecting he had ſeen me, ſpoke as follows. " 'Tis thou, who ſome " time ſince eſcapedſt the puniſhment " thou deſervedſt, which ſhould have " been as cruel a one as I cou'd poſſibly

" have

" have inflicted, had not the dæmon
" who protects thee, rescued thee out
" of my hands: I would have burnt
" thee at a slow fire, and have taken
" care that no part of thy body should
" be exempt from pain. I now defy
" thee to be as ingenious in tormenting
" me, as I would have been in tortu-
" ring thee, hadst thou continued my
" prisoner. But before I die, I and
" my companions may possibly have
" the satisfaction to see thee perish.
" Yes, 'tis on thee, most odious fo-
" reigner, we'll revenge our deaths,
" since 'tis to thy bloody and infer-
" nal weapons, we owe our destructi-
" on.

We were all astonish'd at this inhuman speech; insomuch that I began almost to wish, I had not spoke so much in their favour; when our captain advancing towards this chief, with an air of sweetness and humanity, which seem'd to surprize him, spoke to him as follows. " Brave islan-
" ders, we have defended our gene-
" rous allies, and are now to deter-
" mine

" mine your fate; but you are very
" little acquainted with our disposi-
" ons. We detest the custom of put-
" ting a naked and defenceless enemy
" to death, much more to torture him.
" Not one among you shall die by our
" hands. So far from sentencing you
" to a grievous punishment, we are
" unanimously resolv'd not to enslave
" you, but will send you back into your
" own country, equally free as when you
" came from it. Go and tell your coun-
" trymen that we know how to conquer,
" but better how to pardon; or rather
" that we conquer merely for the sake of
" peace. Tell them, that when we are
" under arms, they will find us formida-
" ble as ever; but that when we have
" laid them down, they'll discover us to
" be humane, tender conquerors, who
" are incapable of abusing their victory.
" Go; you are free; but remember,
" that we neither fear or hate you.

This discourse, intermix'd with pride and humanity, rais'd the admiration of all the prisoners, who, looking upon us as extraordinary persons, that were equally mild and formidable, were struck

dumb for some time; till their Chief bowing, look'd upon us with a countenance, glowing with esteem and gratitude, and deliver'd himself in these words.

" Magnanimous foreigners, your unparallel'd generosity, which engages our affections, because you have restor'd us to our liberty, is a second victory you obtain over our nation; as you manifestly shew, that tho' you exceed us in valour, your humanity is still greater. Don't imagine we shall be so ungrateful, as ever to forget this generous action; nor that our resentment for the evils you have made us suffer, should rise to that height, as to make us endeavour to lessen the merits of it. As your hatred is at an end, it also extinguishes ours; and your generosity stifles all our resentments. I and my companions will go and inspire our countrymen, who are no ways dejected at their defeat, with sentiments as magnanimous as yours. I'll exhort them to pardon, for your sake, the *Taouacous* your allies.

" This, answer'd the Captain, is

" our

" our first and greatest wish. Since
" we have vanquish'd you, and re-
" stor'd you to your liberty, nothing
" is now wanting to complete our
" glory, but to settle a peace between
" the two nations, and reconcile you
" to the generous *Taouagous*, whom,
" prompted by an inveterate hatred,
" you unjustly consider as your ene-
" mies. We offer our selves as medi-
" tors, and will use our utmost endea-
" vours, to conclude a lasting peace be-
" tween the two nations.

Then setting the prisoners at liberty, we treated them with all possible magnificence. We caress'd their Chief; and paid him all imaginable honours, and did whatever lay in our power to engage their esteem. We now perceiv'd that reason began to resume its throne, in the minds of these barbarous and inhuman savages; and we then found, that where the light of it is not totally extinguish'd, there is still room left for virtue.

And now the prisoners went away, and three or four days after return'd in quality of embassadors, with a conside-

rable

rable preſent; being at the ſame time inveſted with full powers to conclude a peace, not only with us, but alſo with the *Tawaons* our friends, which at laſt was reſolv'd upon, and ſolemnly ſwore to. Great rejoycings were made on this occaſion; and I obſerv'd, that they treated each other with the greateſt candor and integrity.

The *Kiſtrinaux* told us, that if we wou'd come and ſee them, they would receive us with due honour; but we thank'd them for their invitation, and did not think proper to promiſe them a viſit. The preſents they made me, were much more conſiderable than thoſe which were given to the reſt; they having been inform'd of the ſpeech I had made before the aſſembly in their favour; and that I had firſt mov'd to have their lives ſpar'd. Their preſents conſiſted in furs, baskets finely wrought, and fruits of all kinds. After this they return'd back to their village, highly ſatisfy'd with the civilities they had met with, and the good ſucceſs of their embaſſy.

End of the Firſt Volume.

J. Gray.

THE TRAVELS OF Mr. *John Gulliver*,

Son to Capt. *Lemuel Gulliver*.

Tranſlated from the *FRENCH*,
By *J. Lockman*.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
Printed for SAM. HARDING, at the *Bible* and *Anchor*, on the Pavement in St. *Martin's-Lane*. MDCCXXXI.

THE CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

THE author and all the Portugueze, *embark on board a* Dutch *veſſel. The young ſhe-ſavage who was in love with him, throws herſelf into the ſea. He meets with Capt.* Harrington, *who relates his adventures in the iſland of the* Crump-back'd. *A Ship is built and a forge ſet up.* Page 1.

CHAP. II.

The emperor of the iſland of the Crump-backs *comes to ſee this veſſel. Their departure. A ſea-fight, in which they are victorious.* p. 23.

CHAP. III.

The author goes on shore on Estate's Island. *Description of the different islands of* Terra del Fuego. *Islands of poets, geometricians, philosophers, musicians, and actors.* p. 36.

CHAP. IV.

Sequel of the description of the islands of Terra del Fuego. *Island of physicians, and that of gluttons.* p. 54.

CHAP. V.

The author narrowly escapes being devour'd by bears in the island of Lataliſpons. *The reception he meets with from the inhabitants. He lives among them. His converſation with* Taiſaco. p. 64.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Queſtions propos'd to the author, and his anſwers. He is told that the inhabitants of the iſland of Letaliſpons *enjoy the happy prerogative of growing young again.* p. 81.

CHAP. VII.

Taifaco *explains to the author the laws of health eſtabliſh'd among the* Letaliſpons. p. 91.

CHAP. VIII.

Learning of the Letaliſpons. *Reflections on latin verſe and rhime.* p. 102.

CHAP. IX.

Deſcription of the village of the Cerebellites, *and of the four Harpſichords. Admiſſion of a new* Cerebellite. p. 108.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Manners and government of the Letalis-pons. *Their notions of sovereign power.* p. 120.

CHAP. XI.

The story of Taisaco *and* Amenosa. p. 134.

CHAP. XII.

The author going a fishing in a canoo with his companion, meets a French *vessel, which takes them in, and brings them back into* Europe. Page 161.

Continuation by the Translator. Page 172.

A Letter from Dr. Ferruginer, *to the author of these Travels.* Page 174.

THE

THE TRAVELS OF *John Gulliver*, &c.

CHAP. I.

The author and all the Portugueze, *embark on board a* Dutch *veſſel. The young ſhe-ſavage who was in love with him, throws herſelf into the ſea. He meets with Capt.* Harrington, *who relates his adventures in the iſland of the* Crump-back'd. *A Ship is built and a forge ſet up.*

JUST after the departure of the *Kiſtrimaux*, ſix of our companions whom we us'd to ſend every day in a canoo upon diſcoveries, came and told us they had ſpied a veſſel at

 anchor,

anchor, at about three leagues from them; that after looking at her thro' their glaſſes, they had row'd up towards her; and ſeeing ſhe carried *Dutch* colours, had gone on board her at once, when being introduc'd to the captain, they told him our caſe; upon hearing which, he had promis'd to take us all on board, provided we would bring him ſome proviſions, which he now began to want.

Overjoy'd at this news, we ſent back the canoo, to deſire the *Dutch* captain to wait for us; and to inform him, at the ſame time, that we were all going to hunt in a body, in order to get as large a quantity of proviſions as he could wiſh for. But now the ſavages hearing we intended to leave them, were deeply afflicted. We told them we were indiſpenſably oblig'd to return into our own countries, to comfort our wives, our relations and friends, who very poſſibly might think we were buried in the waves; that we would never forget the friendſhip they had

ſhewn

ſhewn us, and at the ſame time deſir'd them to think ſometimes of us.

Theſe worthy ſavages, tho' they were very much griev'd and vex'd at our departure, did yet immediately begin to hunt for us, and kill'd a prodigious quantity of game. Their wives broil'd part of it, ſo that they were continually bringing proviſions in their canoos to the ſhip; they alſo brought us water. In a word, five days after, we bid adieu to our beloved allies, and all got into the long-boat.

The *Kiſtrimaux* hearing of our departure, came to bid us farewel, and brought us alſo proviſions, inſomuch that the part of the ſea where we were, ſeem'd almoſt cover'd with canoos. When the long-boat was got within a quarter of a league of the ſhip, the *Dutch* captain ſent to enquire, whether the ſavages would be frighted at the report of the cannon, he being deſirous of having them fir'd in token of rejoycing. Before we gave him an anſwer, we inform'd the chiefs of the *Kiſtrimaux* and *Tacouacus* of his deſign, when

communicating it to their reſpective nations, they told us it would pleaſe them mightily; and that ſince we had been ſo kind as to give them notice of it, it wou'd not terrify them. We therefore ſent word to the captain, that we thank'd him for the great honour he intended us; and that the ſavages who were in our company, would be diverted with the firing, which at the ſame time, we told him would oblige us very much.

The anſwer was no ſooner carried back, but immediately a diſcharge was heard like the noiſe of thunder. 'Twas a great pleaſure for us to view the countenances of the ſavages on this occaſion, ſome of whom, rais'd almoſt to extaſy, ſtood like ſo many ſtatues; whilſt the reſt, being greatly terrified, tho' acquainted before-hand with the nature of the exploſion, ſeem'd reſolv'd to fly back into the iſland. At laſt we got on board, and were receiv'd by the *Dutch* with all imaginable civility.

I cannot forbear taking notice of the tears and ſighs, with which the lovely daughter

daughter of *Abenouſſakee* bemoan'd my departure. The day we ſet ſail, ſhe ſtole out of the hut, in which her father had confin'd her, when ſhe came to me, and made me the ſevereſt reproaches. The famous *Dido* of *Carthage*, was not in deeper deſpair when *Æneas* abandon'd her; nor ever was my heart more deeply afflicted. I regretted the iſland I was now leaving, no leſs than the long ſtay I had made in it, had made me regret my native country. To ſooth my miſtreſs's affliction, I aſſur'd her, ſhe ſhould always live in my memory, and promis'd to reviſit her in a little time; but nothing could calm her tranſports, for when ſhe ſaw the long-boat go far from the ſhore, ſhe leapt into the ſea and was drown'd. This ſight forc'd a flood of tears from my eyes, and I verily believe I ſhou'd have died, had not the reproaches of the *Portugueze* captain and my friends, made me bluſh for ſhame; and convinc'd me that the weakneſs I then diſcover'd was very unbecoming a true ſon of *Neptune*.

The *Dutch* captain being inform'd I was an *Engliſhman*, told me there was a countryman of mine on board, who was a perſon of great wiſdom and experience; that it muſt be a great pleaſure to me to meet with ſuch a man, eſpecially, as he was a perſon of great merit, who beſides had liv'd in ſeveral unknown regions, of which he related wonders. At the ſame time he ſent for this *Engliſhman*, in order to bring us together.

But, gentle reader; what words can paint the joy and ſurprize I felt, when I ſaw this *Engliſhman*, and found it was my worthy friend, Capt. *Harrington*! We embrac'd each other with the utmoſt tenderneſs, and could not forbear burſting into tears. We were unable to utter a ſyllable, becauſe we had ſo many things to ſay; and were ſeiz'd with the moſt violent tranſports. However, at laſt we both broke into ſpeech at the ſame time, when we ask'd one another, how it was poſſible for us to be actually together again? What kind providence had preſerv'd our lives

at

at our ſhipwreck. I anſwer'd firſt, and gave him a faithful account of every thing I had met with. I told him how my canoo had brought me on ſhore in the iſland of *Tilibet*; in what manner I got away from it, by the happy arrival of a *Portugueze* veſſel, which was come to take in water; the manner how we came into the iſland we were now leaving; and how we had been forc'd to ſtay above a twelvemonth in it, by the departure of our ſhip, our ſailors having weigh'd anchor whilſt we were on ſhore. I alſo related to him the ſiniſter accidents we had met with in that iſland; the dangers to which we had been expos'd; the victories we had gain'd, and in a word, the life we had led in it.

Captain *Harrington* having liſtned to me in ſuch a manner, as plainly ſhew'd he was touch'd with this relation of my adventures, ſpake thus: Let me alſo, deareſt *Gulliver*, acquaint you with all that has befallen me ſince our ſad ſeparation. When the violence of the ſtorm had forc'd us to leave our ſhip,

and make all the haſte we cou'd into the long-boat, we enquir'd for you; and not finding you, were reſolv'd to row back to the ſhip in order to take you in. But a ſudden ſlurry drove us at ſuch a diſtance from it, as made it impoſſible for us to reach her, tho' we ply'd our oars with all our ſtrength. And I'll aſſure you, that notwithſtanding the imminent danger we ourſelves were in, we yet were greatly afflicted for your loſs.

In the mean time, the ſea grew ſomewhat calmer, and having row'd for ſeveral hours, we at laſt diſcover'd land with our glaſſes, which at once reſtor'd us to our hopes we till then had loſt. We now ply'd our oars ſtrongly, in order to reach the ſhore we ſaw at a diſtance; and were almoſt come up with it, when our boat, which had ſtruck ſeveral times upon the ſhelves, and was very crazy, open'd on a ſudden againſt the point of a rock, which reach'd almoſt to the ſurface of the water, tho' we had not the good luck to ſpy it. Immediately it was full

of

of water, and ſinking to rights with the whole crew, they were all drown'd. As for myſelf, having by good fortune got hold of a plank, I ſav'd myſelf as well as I cou'd, when I exerted myſelf in a ſurprizing manner in order to reach the ſhore: At laſt I got to it, but was almoſt oppreſs'd with wearineſs, and the weight of my cloaths; but much more ſo with the grief which then ſeiz'd me.

In this deplorable condition, being almoſt parch'd with thirſt, I walk'd about three leagues, to look for a ſpring; when after having rambled about to no purpoſe, night came upon me, ſo that I was forc'd to lie down in a plain, but did not get a wink of ſleep; for the pain I felt, and the dread I was in of being devour'd by wild beaſts, wou'd not ſuffer me to cloſe my eyes. The next morning at day-break, I ſet out, and happily met with ſeveral trees which bore a fruit very like a cherry, but much better taſted. I eat of it with the higheſt pleaſure, becauſe it at the ſame time ſatisfied the cravings

cravings both of hunger and thirſt. I walk'd on, but in great pain, and came to the banks of a pretty large river, the current of which ran vaſtly ſtrong.

I walk'd up towards its head for about two leagues, and at laſt perceiv'd ſome peaſants working in the fields. I went to them, and by a thouſand humble geſtures endeavour'd to excite their pity; but the peaſants, inſtead of being mov'd at my diſtreſs, burſt into a loud laugh every time they turn'd their heads to look at me. However, after they had giggled their fill, they by ſigns bid me go to a village which was not far off. I obey'd, and was no ſooner arriv'd at it, but all the inhabitants running out of their houſes, ſurvey'd me as a very odd ſort of human creature, and laugh'd very heartily at the ſame time.

I cou'd not poſſibly gueſs at the meaning of all this; however, having obſerv'd they were all crump-back'd, I ſuppos'd they might poſſibly be ſurpriz'd at my ſhape, and to ſee I was

not

not hump'd like themſelves. I was not out in my conjecture, for being carried into a houſe, all the fellows began to ſtare at me, and laugh in my face; but I obſerv'd that a woman who was among them, ſurvey'd me very ſeriouſly, the reaſon of which I afterwards found. In the mean time, the maſter of the houſe, who was a man of great gravity and prudence; but more crooked than the reſt; gave, as I was ſince told, his family to underſtand, that it was ungenerous to inſult a poor, deform'd ſtranger in that manner; but they continued their ha, ha, ha's, at ſuch a rate, that he himſelf, notwithſtanding his groteſque gravity, cou'd not forbear laughing by intervals. Having made ſigns that I was hungry, they gave me a piece of cake, and a glaſs of liquor, but ſo ill taſted, that I choſe rather to drink water.

After this wretched meal, which plainly ſhew'd they conſider'd me in the moſt contemptible light, I was left alone, and adviſ'd not to ſtir out, for fear of being inſulted by the populace. In the evening, they gave me a piece of

of pye-cruſt that was but half-bak'd; and afterwards carried me into a kind of garret, where I found a miſerable kind of couch. I laid myſelf down upon it, but had no other covering than my cloaths, which I had dry'd a little.

The next morning, I went and thank'd, as well as I was able, the maſter and miſtreſs of the houſe for their very great civility; upon which they ask'd me by ſigns, whether my native country lay at a great diſtance from theirs. I gave them to underſtand, that I had croſs'd ſeveral ſeas, and was come from a far diſtant country. Then the maſter told me, by ſigns, that he had heard ſtrangers were arriv'd in the ſouthern part of the iſland, who were ſhap'd pretty much like myſelf, and that they alſo came from a very remote country; that the next day he would inform himſelf better of theſe particulars, but cou'd not do it before, becauſe his daughter was juſt going to be married.

And indeed, the young lady's humble ſervant came a moment after to pay her a viſit. He was a little fellow, who tho' he had a large protuberance both before and behind, he nevertheleſs aſſum'd the ſmirking air of a gallant; and ſeem'd to entertain a very good opinion both of his perſon and underſtanding. The young gentlewoman he was to marry had but a ſingle hump, which was ſituated between the two ſhoulders; but then it was ſo ſharp-pointed, and ſhot out to ſuch a length; that in viewing her behind, it ſhaded every part of her body the crown of her head excepted. Our two lovers were mighty ſweet upon one another, and ſeem'd inchanted with their reſpective beauties. Every one congratulated them on their approaching felicity, and were particularly ſtruck with the bride's lovely ſhape. They gave me to underſtand, that her father had admitted me into the houſe, purely that I might ſerve as a foil to the bride and bridegroom's exquiſite ſhape. As for my own part, in ſpight of the deplorable condition

condition I was in, I yet could not forbear laughing every now and then, to ſee ſo many crump-backs of both ſexes got together; beſides I was willing to pay them in coyn, for having rallied me ſo ſeverely the night before, at a time when I was ſo little able to play upon them again.

And now they went out of the houſe in order to celebrate the marriage. I deſir'd to be preſent at the ceremony, but this favour was denied me, for fear my out-of-the-way ſhape ſhou'd occaſion immoderate laughter, and diſturb the ſolemnity. I therefore was order'd to ſtay at home with the bride's mother, who a little after ſat down at her toilet; and with the aſſiſtance of her Abigail, made herſelf as ſpruce as poſſible. She had lock'd herſelf and her waiting-woman in the room, and as I did not know what to do with myſelf, I peep'd thro' the key-hole. I firſt obſerv'd two artificial humps of a decent ſize lying upon the toilet. The lady ſtript as low as the girdle, and order'd her woman to clap on her back and breaſt

breaſt the two humps abovementioned, which ſhe fix'd to her ſhift with great nicety and skill. I then found the reaſon, why ſhe had not laugh'd the night before, when the reſt were ſo merry upon me: ſelf-love, or rather a conſciouſneſs of her own defect, having forc'd her to be ſerious.

The new married-couple being return'd home with all their friends and relations, great rejoycings were made; and after the banquet was ended, which was very ſplendid, they oblig'd me to dance, in order to divert the company. I was as good as a *Punchinello* to theſe delightful creatures, and indeed my dancing made them laugh very heartily. Some of them, who were more polite and humane than the reſt, came to me, and deſir'd me, by ſigns, to excuſe their laughing, ſince it was impoſſible for them to refrain from it; they told me however, that tho' my ſhoulders were even, and my breaſt flat, I yet ought not to be ſo much dejected, ſince nature does not indulge a fine ſhape to every one; and that it is not in our power

power to be otherwiſe than ſhe has made us. So true it is, that nothing is really deform'd or ridiculous in itſelf; and that whatever appears ſo to our eyes, is ſingular and uncommon only by compariſon. However, the lady of the houſe, who had always forbore laughing, deſir'd the company to ſpare their raillery, and not uſe me with contempt. We always have an affection for thoſe who reſemble ourſelves, tho' the ſimilitude be in our imperfections. The next day, they gave me a country fellow to conduct me to the ſouthern part of the iſland, where the ſtrangers abovemention'd like myſelf, were ſaid to be. I then took leave of the family, and thank'd them for all their favours; and ſetting out with my guide, he accompanied me two leagues, and pointing out to me the way I was to go, left me. I travell'd ſeven days, and at laſt, after having loſt my way, and ſuffer'd very much from hunger, thirſt, fatigue and uneaſineſs, I at laſt came to the place to which I had been directed.

I was agreeably ſurpriz'd to meet with ſeveral, who were friends and neighbours to our country, *viz. Dutchmen.* As moſt of them underſtood *Engliſh*, I told them my ill fortune, and begg'd them to let me ſtay among them. They receiv'd me with great civility, and told me, there were an hundred and fifty of them, who, like myſelf, had met with foul weather, and been oblig'd to run-a-ground upon that coaſt; that they had not during the ſix months they had liv'd in it, once left the coaſt where I then found them, and had always ſtood upon their guard; that hitherto they had been unmoleſted; and that the only incivility they had receiv'd from the inhabitants, who appear'd very ugly and ill-ſhap'd, was, to have been frequently laugh'd at by them; whence they judg'd that they were a preſumptuous, arrogant, waggiſh, malicious people; qualities commonly found in the deform'd.

And now, ſaid they, we are perhaps condemn'd to ſpend the remainder of our days in this melancholy condition,

we having nothing left but a long-boat, which is so crazy, that we dare not venture to sea in it. We have a few able ship-carpenters among us, but these cannot refit her, because there is no iron in this island, and consequently it will be impossible for us to fell any timber. And tho' we were to do this with sharp stones, like the inhabitants of the country; of what use would our little planks be to us, since most of the iron of our boat is broke to pieces, and too old to serve again?

This discourse, which made me almost despair of seeing my country more, gave me very much uneasiness; but, I at last set my mind at ease, and resolv'd to live like those I was got among; and spend all my days in hunting, eating and drinking. How many country-Esquires, says I, in *England*, lead the very same life? What do they else? and yet they are highly satisfy'd with their course of life; whilst on the other side, the inhabitants of cities, who spend their time quite differently, have them in the utmost contempt; and look upon them

them as a ſett of men, equally brutiſh with the beaſts they declare war againſt; much after the ſame manner, as the inhabitants of this iſland deſpiſe us, and think our ſhape and way of life equally ridiculous. After all, ſince I am reduc'd to this unhappy condition, 'twill be in vain for me to repine at it.

I therefore went a hunting with all my exil'd companions; and cuſtom which makes all things familiar, made me inſenſibly take pleaſure in an exerciſe, I before almoſt thought unworthy a rational creature.

One day, as I was returning from the chaſe, being got into a pretty deep valley, I perceiv'd certain cracks, by which mines are generally found. I immediately ran to my companions, and telling them of it, engag'd them to come the next day and break up the ground; in order to ſee whether we ſhould not meet with iron, in the place where I had ſeen thoſe cracks. We had not digg'd above a foot, before we were agreeably ſurpriz'd to ſee a fine,

round mass of oar. Having look'd some time about it, we also had the good fortune to find an excellent lime-stone of great use in melting iron. Upon this happy discovery, we resolv'd some time after to build a little furnace. Having no cast-iron to build the vaults with, we made them of stone. We made a pair of bellows out of some of the planks of our boat, which we put together; cover'd them with skins, and fastned them with wooden pegs. The nose of this clumsy pair of bellows was made of a pistol-barril. The difficulty was to make the bellows play, and as we had no water near the furnace, we were oblig'd to fix them in such a manner, that we might be able to manage them with our hands, as the smiths do in *Europe*.

Having a great quantity of wood, we made as much charcoal as was requisite for lighting our furnace. We dug a proportionable quantity of iron out of the mine, and after the usual labour, we cast a sow of about three hundred

dred weight. This operation was ſo much the more ſurprizing, as we had nothing to work with but wooden pokers.

Having caſt our ſow, we made it into hammers, ſuckers, anvils; and continued to melt the iron, that we might be in a condition to work ſoon at our forge. For this purpoſe we built a chafery, where we employ'd our cleats, and our bellows; we laid a bottom of caſt-iron, and made bars of different ſizes, wedges, hatchets, ſaws, pincers, vices, nails, and every thing neceſſary for building a ſhip. A lockſmith in our company, was of great ſervice to us in ſhaping ſeveral pieces of iron, and making the ſteel for our different tools. Our anchors coſt us a vaſt deal of labour, however we at laſt finiſh'd them.

We afterwards fell'd ſeveral trees; theſe we ſaw'd, and with our tools wrought them into maſts and yards. We ſaw'd the timber into planks of different ſizes, when our carpenters, who were very good workmen, began

to build the veſſel, and made ſuch diſpatch, that in a few months ſhe was almoſt compleated. But now we were in want of cables, tar, and cloth to make ſails with. To procure theſe, we gave ſeveral pieces of our caſt and wrought iron to the inhabitants, who came in crouds to admire our work, and were now ſo accuſtom'd to ſee us, that they no longer burſt out a laughing. We, I ſay, barter'd ſeveral pieces of our iron, for ropes and cloth, of which they gave us great quantities; and likewiſe tar made of a fine turpentine, which diſtill'd from lofty fir-trees ſituated in the north part of the iſland.

Our veſſel being completely built, we caulk'd her tight, and likewiſe tarr'd our ropes, which we made into cables of all ſizes. We ſet up our maſts with their top-maſts and ſhrowds, and fix'd the yards with the ſeveral geer. At laſt, after above a years labour, we launch'd our ſhip, and call'd her the *Vulcan*, becauſe ſhe ow'd her original to the forge, which we had ſo happily built in a country where there never had been any before.

—'Twas

'Twas then the curioſity of the inhabitants increas'd to a prodigious degree. One of them offer'd us a conſiderable ſum, upon condition that they might ſhew our ſhip for money, in that part of the iſland where ſhe then lay, which we agreed to. Crouds of people flock'd daily to the ſight, and their aſtoniſhment was not inferior to their curioſity, and a conſiderable ſum of money was gain'd by it.

CHAP. II.

The emperor of the iſland of the Crumpbacks *comes to ſee this veſſel. Their departure. A ſea-fight, in which they are victorious.*

THERE was among us, continued Capt. *Harrington*, a young fellow who had a great talent for learning languages. This man having made a little progreſs in that of the country we were in, had been of great ſervice to us in the trade we had been oblig'd to carry on with the natives; in order to purchaſe ſuch things as were neceſſa-

ry for us before we left the island. He was our interpreter in a visit we then receiv'd from an envoy sent by *Dossogrebosskow*, emperor of the island, the LXXVII of that name; a monarch who had reign'd with glory upwards of thirty years.

The envoy told us, that his *Independance*, (which is the title of honour given to their emperors,) having heard of the prodigious canoo we had built, desir'd we would carry it to him, in order for his viewing it; that for this purpose, he would send us as many camels, as might be necessary for making the carriage of it to court the easier. We answer'd by our interpreter, that his *Independance* desir'd an impossibility; and that in case he wanted to see our canoo, he must give himself the trouble to come to the coast, where we would endeavour to receive him with all the honours due to so great a prince.

He answer'd, that he must be oblig'd to take the dimensions of the great canoo, in order to satisfy the emperor, who

who he ſaid would never condeſcend to come and ſee her, unleſs he were firſt ſhewn the impoſſibility of conveying her by land. Immediately he went on board our veſſel, and having taken all her dimenſions very exactly, and calculated her burthen, he promis'd to make a faithful report of the whole to his *Independance*; and endeavour to demonſtrate to him, that there was no poſſibility of conveying her by land. He ſet out, and return'd ſome days after, to acquaint us, that on the morrow, the emperor and his whole court would come to ſee the canoo; and therefore we muſt prepare to receive him in a manner ſuitable to his exalted dignity.

Unhappily we had no cannon, which was a great diſappointment to us, ſince it would prevent our making a figure on ſo glorious an occaſion. The envoy told us, that as ſoon as his imperial majeſty ſhould be advanc'd within an hundred paces of us, all we had to do, was to fall proſtrate with our faces to the ground, in teſtimony of adoration;

adoration; that after this we ſhould riſe; and that our chief, or the interpreter in his name, and in the name of us all, ſhould make him a ſhort compliment, to declare the admiration with which his auguſt preſence fill'd us; and the deep ſenſe we had of the ſingular honour he condeſcended to do us. At the ſame time, he gave our firſt captain, whoſe name was *Van-Land*, a kind of ſpeaking-trumpet; and told us, that whenever the emperor gave audience, thoſe whom he indulg'd that honour, were not allow'd to approach his ſacred perſon nearer than the diſtance of an hundred paces; and conſequently that they muſt uſe a ſpeaking-trumpet in diſcourſing with him; and that his chancellor always deliver'd his anſwers thro' the ſame inſtrument.

He told us farther, that whenever the emperor ſhould come forward, in order to view the great canoo, we muſt retire an hundred paces to the left: that however, he would ſend his miniſters and courtiers to entertain us. Having acquainted us with theſe whimſical

ſical formalities, we ask'd the envoy, if, in addreſſing any of the prince's miniſters or courtiers, any titles of honour were beſtow'd upon them, ſuch as your *lordſhip*, or your *excellence*: he replied, that 'twas cuſtomary among them to beſtow titles of honour upon perſons, not from the qualities of their minds, but from ſuch as ſuited their ranks and dignities. As for inſtance, ſays he, in addreſſing a miniſter of ſtate, we ſay your *Affability*; a military man, your *Humanity*; a commiſſioner of the treaſury, your *Diſintereſtedneſs*; a judge, your *Integrity*; the Brachmans who attend upon the emperor, your *Knowledge*; the ladies, your *Rigour*; the young noblemen, your *Modeſty*; and all the courtiers in general, your *Sincerity*. Our interpreter got theſe ſeveral titles by heart, and promis'd to obſerve them, as far as his memory wou'd give him leave.

The next day, the emperor having mounted a huge camel; preceeded by a large body of life-guards, and follow'd by a numerous train, arriv'd about three in the afternoon. Being come within

an

an hundred paces of us, he ſtopt; upon which we immediately fell proſtrate, according to our inſtructions. We then roſe up, when our interpreter taking the ſpeaking-trumpet, made a compliment to his *Independance*, which laſted five minutes. The chancellor's anſwer, which was very polite and eloquent, took up thirty ſeconds; and this being done, we drew off to the left, in order to make room for the emperor, who getting into our canoo with ſome of his favourites, ſet out towards the ſhip; but as his *Independance* was very fat and unweildy, all the courtiers were forc'd to lift him into the boat, but he had like to have tumbled into the ſea. He did us the honour to ſtay two hours on board; and his courtiers having view'd her one after another, were in the higheſt admiration at ſo uncommon a ſight.

The emperor was look'd upon as one of the fineſt ſhap'd princes, that had ever ſat upon the throne of that iſland. He was very tall and corpulent.

His

His ſhoulders were vaſtly broad, between which there aroſe a perfectly convex hump, that quite eclips'd his ſhoulder-blade, and ſham'd all the camels of his train. Another natural protuberance he had before, fell down to his ſtomach, and was almoſt contiguous to his prominent belly. This, in the eyes of his ſubjects, diffus'd a majeſtic gravity over his whole perſon.

Our interpreter diſcours'd with ſeveral of the courtiers, who told us very politely, that they ſhar'd with us in the joy we muſt have felt, in having had an opportunity, of adminiſtring a new pleaſure to their auguſt ſovereign. But now the emperor having ſeen and examin'd the veſſel at leiſure, and applauded our great art and skill, return'd into the canoo, when mounting his camel, he departed with his whole train. Before he left the place, he ſent our captain his picture, ſet with diamonds and emeralds, which was very like his majeſty, except that the artiſt had flatter'd him a little, by drawing

drawing his protuberances a little larger than the life.

In the mean time, as we cou'd not leave the iſland before a month; and that each of us had not above five or ſix charges of powder left, it was reſolv'd we ſhould husband our proviſions till we embark'd; and keep our powder to knock down game two days before we ſet ſail, in order that we might not be forc'd to broil it. Accordingly we made a reſolution to live upon fiſh till we ſet out; but then we were unprovided with nets, which was a great diſappointment to us; however, we ſupply'd the want of them in the following manner.

I went into a neighbouring wood, and cut eight very ſtrait branches, which I made into poles of ten foot in length. I afterwards got our locksmith to make five or ſix hundred little hooks, all of them very ſharp pointed. Theſe hooks, being baited with pieces of fleſh, were fix'd to my poles; and I ſet them on the ſtrand when the tide was out, knowing it would be cover'd with water at the return

return of it. I waited for this, in order to ſee whether the waves would not carry away my poles, but had the ſatisfaction to find they kept tight and firm, and indeed I had drove them in very ſtrong. Three hours after it was ebb, when I ſaw all my poles loaded with fiſh of different ſizes. I then went and call'd ſeveral of my comrades, and deſir'd them to help me in bringing along the great cargo of fiſh I had catch'd. They were agreeably ſurpriz'd to find I had had ſuch good ſport. We repeated it for ſeveral days till we ſet out, and catch'd ſo much fiſh, that we carried great quantities on board with us.

Having put ſufficient ballaſt into our veſſel, and being prepar'd to embark, a general chaſe was order'd for three days together. Fortune was ſo favourable, that we kill'd a great number of wild oxen, deer, and ſeveral other animals, all which we carried on board the veſſel; and at laſt, a favourable gale ſpringing up, we weigh'd anchor and ſet ſail for *Europe*.

A week after, by an obſervation, we computed we had ran an hundred and thirty leagues. We were not in want of a compaſs, our mate having given us an excellent loadſtone, he had happily ſav'd from the wreck, and with this he touch'd a needle which our lockſmith made. But unluckily we had not one great gun on board; and having no other arms but our ſabres, bayonets, muskets and piſtols, as our powder was gone, the latter conſequently could be of no uſe; ſo that we were very uneaſy leſt we ſhould be oblig'd to fight. However the firſt engagement we met with, procur'd us the very thing we wanted, as the reader will preſently find.

We had now gone on in our courſe for about two months, when we diſcover'd a pirate of *Achem* who gave us chaſe. We crouded all our ſail in order to get clear of her, but to no purpoſe, and ſhe came up with us. We then prepar'd to put ourſelves in a poſture of defence, and join'd in opinion with the captain, the pilot and the mate, that

that we ſhould endeavour to grapple with her, ſhe being a ſmall veſſel, and her crew very inconſiderable.

Accordingly we did ſo, and after having ſtood a few broad-ſides, which did us very little damage, we got to windward of the pirate, and ſoon grappled with her. Immediately we boarded her, thoſe at the head puſhing forward with their drawn ſabres, and the reſt with their bayonets fix'd upon the muzzel of their pieces. The barbarians, who were much inferior in number to us, aſtoniſh'd and confounded at this bold action, were moſt of them cut to pieces; ſo that we got poſſeſſion of their veſſel, which we clear'd of the proviſions, goods, powder and whatever tackle and rigging might be of ſervice to us; and were overjoy'd to find twenty four pieces of cannon on board her; and this being done, we put the pirates on board their own ſhip, not thinking it proper to encumber our veſſel with ſuch priſoners.

'Tis now, ſays Capt. *Harrington*, about two months ſince this happen'd;

and as by taking this prize, we have got *India* goods of great value on board, such as callico's of *Bengal* and *Surrat*, and *China* silk, we are resolv'd to sail for the south-sea, and there carry on a private trade. Happily, chance carried us near the island on which you was cast; and a calm having detain'd us in the road, you spy'd us, and implor'd our succour. Let us ever, my dearest *Gulliver*, bless providence, whose ways are unsearchable; and always put our greatest confidence in it, tho' we should be oppress'd with numberless misfortunes.

I now, says he, have told you all my adventures, since we parted, by which you find I have led a very melancholy life; however, my fortunate meeting with you, has restor'd me to all my joy. In the mean time, let me know why you seem to regret the place you lately came from. Are you dead to those impressions, which a love of liberty, and the desire of seeing again one's native country, inspires all other men with? Has the continual series of ill fortune, which has attended

you,

you, caſt a deadly damp upon your mind?

I cou'd not then forbear telling him the violent paſſion I had felt for *Abenouſſakee*'s daughter, and how I was tortur'd, when I ſaw her, overcome with the blackeſt deſpair, leap into the ſea, at my leaving her. Capt. *Harrington* did all that lay in his power to comfort me, and told me very obligingly, that he had two daughters in *England*, who were look'd upon as very pretty women; that in caſe we had the good fortune of reviſiting again our native country, I ſhould take my choice, and at the ſame time promis'd to ſettle half his eſtate upon me; that he was oblig'd to me for reſcuing him from ſlavery in the iſland of *Babilary*, which, he ſaid, was ſuch an obligation, as it wou'd be impoſſible for him ever to repay.

CHAP. III.

The author goes on shore on Estate's-land. *Description of the different islands of* Terra del Fuego. *Islands of poets, geometricians, philosophers, musicians, and actors.*

THE discourses I frequently had with Capt. *Harrington*, allay'd, in some measure, my anxiety; reason began insensibly to resume its throne, and the deep anguish which sat brooding over my spirits, was now a little abated. Two days after our being on board, a gale sprung up, which tho' not a very favourable one, we yet weigh'd anchor. We spread our sails, and ply'd to windward. The wind afterwards blew very favourable, so that in about six weeks we entred the streights of *Magellan*, between *Terra del Fuego* and that of the *Patagons*. 'Tis well known that *Terra del Fuego* was discover'd in 1520 by the famous *Ferdinand Magellan*, who took it

it for a large iſland; but mariners have ſince diſcover'd that this land does not conſiſt of one ſingle iſland, but of a conſiderable number, which lie very high, but are little known to this day. The inhabitants, if we are to credit the *Spaniards*, are giants; but other nations, who have gone into the ſouth-ſea thro' the ſtreights of *Magellan*, inform us, that thoſe iſlands are inhabited by people, who, tho' very robuſt, are but of the uſual ſtature; that they live like ſo many beaſts; and tho' they inhabit a very cold climate, they yet go naked, and dwell in the holes of the mountains.

In my opinion, they all have impos'd upon us; and I'm perſuaded theſe people are as much civiliz'd, as the nations of the ſouthern part of *America* have been in all ages, who are ſeperated from them only by a very narrow *Streight*. Be this as it will, the diſcoveries we made in our paſſage thro' the ſtreights of *Magellan*, may be of ſervice to correct the miſtake we have hitherto been in with

regard to thoſe iſlands, whoſe inhabitants were ſuppos'd to be wild, unpoliſh'd, untractable men. However, 'tis certain that ſome of them at leaſt are peopled by men who are far from meriting the name of ſavage, as will be ſhewn in the ſequel.

Our crew were for putting into *Eſtate's-land*, the moſt ſouthern of all the iſlands. It was formerly diſcover'd by the *Dutch*, who have given ſuch a general and confus'd idea of it, that we may conclude 'tis but little known to them. Curioſity prompted us to ſee whether that iſland were really barren and uninhabited, as was reported; or whether it were poſſible to make a ſettlement upon it, and carry on a trade there. We coaſted ſeveral iſlands, and being got near that of the *Eſtates*, were very much ſurpriz'd to ſee a boat rowing towards us, fill'd with people in *European* habits, who drawing near the ſhip, ſpoke to us in *Dutch*, and invited us to caſt anchor in their port. They guided us through the midſt of a multitude of rocks which form'd a

kind

kind of bulwark round their iſland, that wou'd have barr'd our entrance, had we not made uſe of the long-boat. 'Twas then *January*, and the ſeaſon was vaſtly hot; but they aſſur'd us 'twas very cold in thoſe parts in *June* and *July*. We went up a little bay, which form'd a pretty ſecure road, and caſt anchor in a nook on the left.

So far from finding the iſland barren and uninhabited, we ſaw a very fruitful populous country. I am ſure my eyes never beheld ſuch handſome men and women; and I can affirm, that I did not meet with ſo much as one perſon who was the leaſt deform'd. A *Dutch* veſſel, as we were told, having caſt anchor at that iſland in 1673, but upon what deſign I cannot tell; found the country ſo lovely and fruitful, the inhabitants ſo kind and polite, and particularly the women ſo beautiful, and ſweet-temper'd, that the crew cou'd never be prevail'd with to quit ſo delightful a place, which abounded with every thing that could be wiſh'd; a place where love, the ſtrongeſt of all tyes, kept

them in ſpight of themſelves. Accordingly, they thought no more of their country and families, but marrying ſeveral women of the country, (polygamy being allow'd both by law and cuſtom) they had children by them, which increas'd their affection for that charming ſpot.

The reader will ſuppoſe, that we met with a hearty welcome; and indeed I never ſpent my time ſo agreeably in any place before or ſince; inſomuch that we were tempted to imitate the *Dutch*, who at the ſight of this country, had forgot their own. But our captain, and the reſt of the officers, being of an age not to be enſnar'd by female charms, eaſily reſiſted the temptation. As for myſelf, I muſt confeſs I ſhould have been captivated, had not the judicious advice which Capt. *Harrington* gave me, check'd my natural fondneſs for the fair-ſex. He told me, that the beauty of a woman ought never to tempt us to engage in ſuch tyes as were laſting; that I ow'd myſelf to my country and family; that my father might poſſibly be dead; and that

I was bound to aſſiſt my brothers and ſiſters, who were ſtill very young.

During my ſtay in this iſland, I one day ſaw the natives croud about the port, and embark haſtily on board a great number of little veſſels. I enquir'd the reaſon of that, of a young man, whoſe name was *Wanouef*, born in that iſland of *Dutch* parents, who gave me the following anſwer. You are to know, ſays he, that this iſland is ſurrounded with ſeveral others, with whom we trade, and this trade is of ſeveral kinds. In the iſland of *Foolick*, ſituated five leagues from hence to the north-weſt, will ſhortly be open'd a celebrated fair, which is kept every year about this time. To give you an idea of the curious wares which are ſold at this famous fair, I muſt firſt tell you, that the moſt conſiderable inhabitants of that iſland are all poets, who pretend to be inſpir'd by heaven. They affirm themſelves to be deſcended from one *HEROSOM*, an illuſtrious poet of great antiquity, ſon to the ſun and moon, whoſe celeſtial deſcendants, they ſay, are inceſſantly

ly indulg'd the influence of theſe two powerful planets. They adore this *HEROSOM*, and pay him a moſt ſolemn worſhip. Like him, they ſpend their whole lives in writing verſes of every ſpecies, all which they vend in a grand manner at the fair abovementiond.

I then ask'd *Wanonef*, whether this trade were advantageous and profitable. Of little profit, ſays he, for the iſland in general is very barren, and the inhabitants miſerably poor; but then, happily for them, they deſpiſe riches; and the poetical traffic, which is the only one, produces ſufficient to maintain the people, and defray the ſmall expence of the nobles, or in other words, the poets. As the kingdom is elective, the monarch is always choſen from among theſe; but the electors are themſelves choſen out of the body of the people, otherwiſe the grandees would eternally ſquabble about the election; each of theſe would aim at the crown, becauſe there is not one among

among them, but thinks he himſelf beſt deſerves to wear it.

Don't the grandees, ſays I, ſometimes foment great troubles in the State? Very often, ſays he; the government is obnoxious to frequent revolutions, occaſion'd by the ambition of the Great, who are vain, haughty, jealous, fickle, factious, and reſtleſs. About twenty four years ago, one *Hoſtoginam* was choſen king. His reputation at that time was very great among the people. His juſt, ſagacious, ſublime mind, and his great wiſdom and extreme politeneſs, gain'd him every voice. However, he did not ſpeak his own tongue with the utmoſt purity, which was the only objection that cou'd be made to him. The language of the grandees of this kingdom is vaſtly difficult, becauſe they are oblig'd to ſpeak in cadence, rime, and meaſure; and to uſe a peculiar ſtile, which is very different from that of the vulgar.

But *Hoſtoginam*, notwithſtanding this defect, was elected king. In the beginning

ginning of his reign, the people had no reaſon to be diſſatisfy'd with their choice, for he held the reins with the moſt conſummate prudence, and govern'd with the utmoſt policy and moderation; he had the moſt tender regard for the grandees, whoſe frailties he flatter'd, and conceal'd all their faults; but as to the people, he was now become their idol. However, this learned and judicious prince, experienc'd the viciſſitude of all ſublunary things. As he was a prince of great underſtanding, and an enemy to novelty, he attempted to aboliſh the worſhip of *HEROSOM*, whom he affirm'd to be a mere man; and ſaid, he did not deſerve that altars ſhould be erected in his honour. He publiſh'd a proclamation for the aboliſhing of this worſhip; but this was look'd upon as the moſt barefac'd impiety, and diſguſted the nobles no leſs than the common people. The former call'd a parliament, repreſenting the whole nation, who were of opinion, that as *Hoſtoginam* was convicted of a deſign to ſubvert the antient religion of the country, they therefore ſhould

ſummon

ſummon him to revoke his ſcandalous edict, and immediately recognize *HEROSOM* as god. *Hoſtoginam* refus'd to comply, and oppos'd the conſpirators with a ſmall number of his faithful ſubjects, who had approv'd his innovation; and were as incredulous, at leaſt, as himſelf, with regard to the pretended divinity of the father of poeſy. This occaſion'd the utmoſt confuſion, and 'twas in vain that *Hoſtoginam* relied upon his feeble authority, and the love of his ſubjects; for by this time it was grown very cold.

That of the grandees, which now was more powerful and in greater credit in the ſtate, reſolv'd to enquire into the genealogy of *Hoſtoginam*, and affirm'd he was not one of the poetical deſcendants of *HEROSOM*. 'Tis not known, whether this accuſation was well or ill grounded. But be that as it will, this pretended diſcovery was made a handle to ruin him, and accordingly he was try'd and declar'd to have forfeited his crown. As ſeveral perſons of great authority were his friends,

friends, ſome of the grandees voted to have him put to death; however, this cruel motion was unanimouſly rejected, and *Hoſtoginam* was only baniſh'd to a royal palace, ſituated on the banks of a river which flows by the capital city. Here he ſpends his life with his old friends, men of equal merit with himſelf, who ſtill adhere to him in his misfortunes; a rare example of fidelity, of which there are few inſtances in hiſtory.

In the mean time *Baſtippo*, who had the chief hand in dethroning the prince, was rais'd to the throne, and crown'd with the utmoſt ſolemnity. This prince would have been rank'd among the moſt illuſtrious that ever reign'd in the iſland, had he been more politic, and behav'd with greater moderation. But he had no manner of regard for the grandees; ſo far from it, that he endeavour'd to leſſen them; treated them with contempt upon all occaſions, and went ſuch lengths as to uſe ſeveral of them ill.

But now the friends of the ejected monarch, took advantage of the diſcontent of the grandees, and form'd a conſpiracy

conſpiracy againſt him, in which they engag'd thoſe very perſons who had rais'd him to the throne. The inſurrection became univerſal, inſomuch that the new king was forc'd to quit the iſland, for otherwiſe he would have fallen a ſacrifice to the vengeance of the grandees. Ever ſince that time, the government has ſunk to a kind of anarchy, the people not having yet agreed to elect a new king.

I was extremely pleas'd with theſe particulars, and ask'd *Wanouef*, whether the fair of the iſland which drew ſo many merchants to it, abounded with commodities. Yes, ſays he, of all ſorts. One ſhop is full of tragedies, another of comedies; here we meet with operas, (the words I mean,) cantata's and paſtorals; there epic poems; here, ſatyrs, epiſtles and elegies; there tales, fables, epigrams and ballads. Some ſhops are ſtock'd with every ſpecies of poetry, from the epic poem and tragedy, down to the ballad and riddle. There are alſo manufactures of all prices, but nothing ſells ſo cheap as ſpiritual ſongs.

Have

Have all the merchants, ſays I, who buy theſe ſeveral particulars, a good market for their wares. That's as it happens, ſays he. As moſt of the buyers who retail out their goods again, are no judges of their value; they are often impos'd upon, and oblig'd to ſell that for a trifle, for which they paid a great price. Beſides, the trade theſe retailers carry on, is not very conſiderable; for the goods they purchaſe at *Foolick* fair, are always ſearch'd before they are ſhipp'd for the other iſlands, and what is moſt grating, are ſometimes confiſcated by the inſpectors.

But, ſays I, interrupting him, are there no orators, philoſophers and geometricians in this iſland? If there are any, how is it poſſible for them to ſubmit to a poetical government? We formerly, ſays the *Dutchman*, ſwarm'd with them, but they have been drove out, as ſo many diſturbers of the peace, becauſe they contemn'd the poſterity of *HEROSOM*, or the children of the ſun and moon, tho' they are deſcended

from

from the earth and air. Theſe were for ever exclaiming againſt poetry; they depreciated the beſt manufactures, and put the moſt celebrated artiſts upon the ſame foot with thoſe contemptible caper-merchants, whoſe art, ſaid they, is equally difficult and unprofitable.

The orators are happily retir'd into a very fruitful country, where nevertheleſs moſt of them are either over-grown with fat, or reduc'd to ſo many skeletons. But the philoſophers and geometricians have been forc'd to inhabit a dry, barren country, in which nothing is found but bitter fruits, and is beſides choak'd up with briars and brambles. 'Tis here the geometricians ſpend the day in drawing figures on the ſand, and in demonſtrating clearly to one another, that one and one make two; and the night in obſerving the cœleſtial motions, inſomuch that one would think they were ſo many inanimate Beings. A deep ſilence reigns throughout the whole iſland; and they meditate ſo intenſely on curves, obtuſe an-

gles, *trapeziums*, and other mathematical figures, that one wou'd conclude their minds were moulded into thoſe ſhapes.

As for the philoſophers, ſome employ themſelves in weighing the air, others in meaſuring the ſeveral degrees of heat, cold, dryneſs, and moiſture; in comparing two drops of water, and examining whether they are exactly alike; in hunting after definitions, that is, in ſupplying the place of a word by ſeveral others equivalent to it; in diſputing on the nature of exiſtence, on infinity, on modal entities, the origin of thought, and ſuch like topics, which they look upon as highly worthy the employment of the human mind.

They take a particular delight in raiſing vaſt edifices, call'd by them ſyſtems. Theſe they begin at top, and ſhore them as well as they can, till ſuch time as the foundations are laid; but very often, while this is doing, the building falls to the ground, and buries the architect under its ruins. Some of them are perpetually talking

of

of *Vortices*, and the *materia ſubtilis*; others about abſolute accidents and ſubſtantial forms; whence it is, that ſuch as have had the curioſity to viſit our iſland, purely for inſtruction, return almoſt as ignorant, as thoſe who never came among us. In fine, this country is always cover'd with a perpetual ſnow; the roads are very bad, and travellers frequently loſe their way in them.

Tho' the inhabitants of *Foolick*, ſays I, would not permit philoſophers, orators, and geometricians to live among them, I preſume they had not the ſame antipathy to muſicians, ſince their art bears ſuch an affinity to poetry. Muſicians, ſays he, don't live in the poetical iſland, but inhabit one that lies very near it, where they are ſuffer'd to ſpend their days in peace and tranquility, provided they pay tribute to the king of *Foolick*. Their iſland is vaſtly agreeable, and no other ſound is heard in it, but that of voices and inſtruments, which form a perpetual concert: the parterres of their country-houſes are ſo

diſpos'd, that they look like pieces of muſic prick'd upon paper: all their gardens are ſo many muſical compartments, where all kinds of airs are found at ſight; ſo that it may be juſtly affirm'd, that the groves, the trees, and flowers are really ſung in this country. Their houſes in general are hung with operas, cantata's, interludes, and ſonatas; the people always ſing their words; and the moſt common trifling things are expreſs'd in recitativo, and the moſt melting airs. They are ſubject to a monarch whoſe ſcepter is in the ſhape of a cylinder; this he always holds in his hand, and therewith checks their flights, and whimſical maggots. In fine, they are all voice or all ear; inſomuch that they ſeem not to make the leaſt uſe of their other ſenſes, much leſs of the rational faculties: however, we are aſſur'd they would be very reaſonable creatures, were it poſſible for good ſenſe to be prick'd down like muſic. They buy up vaſt quantities of the commodities of *Foolick* fair, but of the very worſt

ſort;

ſort; but then they have the art of ſetting the moſt wretched performances, in a very advantageous light, by their learned ſophiſtication; beſides, what they gave but a very trifle for, they vend at a very high price.

Another ſort of men, who inhabit an iſland which is not very far diſtant from it, follow almoſt the ſame method, and are no leſs gainers by it. The people I mean are players; a polite and aimable ſett of creatures, whoſe ſole aim is to pleaſe. They travel into all the iſlands round about them, where they build ſtages, and ſpend their whole lives in ſpeaking in public. Their government is far from being regular, and is a kind of anarchy. We are aſſur'd, that they underſtand perfectly the art of giving elegance to flat verſes; ſtrength to low and trifling thoughts; ſublimity to rants; and grace to the moſt trite circumſtances. In a word, I don't know whether it would be poſſible for the inhabitants of *Foolick* to ſubſiſt, did

not the players and muſicians, conſume the greateſt part of their commodities.

CHAP. IV.

Sequel of the deſcription of the iſlands of Terra del Fuego. *Iſland of phyſicians, and that of gluttons.*

AFter this account, which I thought amuſing enough, but dare not quite affirm it to be matter of fact, as I know it only by hear-ſay, the *Dutchman* continued to relate the following particulars, which I ſhall ſet down with the fidelity of an hiſtorian. Since I, ſays he, have mentioned theſe ſeveral iſles to you, I muſt not omit a very famous and wealthy one, which alſo is one of thoſe that the *Europeans* have improperly call'd *Terra del Fuego*. 'Tis that of phyſicians. It produces nothing but manna, rhubarb, caſſia, ſena, and ſuch like medicinal plants. All the artificers are either apothecaries, or makers of ſiringes, inciſion-knives and lancets. All its waters are mineral, ſo that the

the ſoil yields nothing neceſſary to the ſuſtenance of the body, or the convenience of life.

However, the people are very rich, and enjoy an affluence of all things. As the inhabitants of the other iſlands fancy they want their aſſiſtance, they go thither in crouds, and carry great ſums of money along with them, but generally return from thence, naked and pennyleſs, in caſe they are able to return, for ſeveral of them die there. And indeed their plains are ſo many wide-extended church-yards, the air thereof being very dangerous, particularly to foreigners, notwithſtanding the ſalubrity of the plants. The inhabitants of *Foolick*, affirm there is a ſubterraneous paſſage in this iſland, which leads to hell by very ſhort paths, and that the ſprings of *Acheron* and of *Lethe* are found in it.

The government of this iſland is like that of antient *Rome*. The phyſicians who preſide in the adminiſtration repreſent the patricians; and the ſurgeons, who compoſe the ſecond body

of the republic anſwer to the plebeians. Both of them aſſemble daily in a gloomy palace, hung with black velvet. 'Tis here all their conſultations are held, but with this difference, that the former, who compoſe the higher houſe, form their eſſays and diſcourſes on the living, and the latter on the dead.

Theſe two bodies hate one another, as cordially as the ſenate and people of *Rome* us'd to do; the former has alſo its conſuls, and the latter its tribunes. The firſt are perpetually endeavouring to humble and depreſs the laſt; but as theſe are more numerous, and powerfully protected by the prieſteſſes of the goddeſs of *LOVE*, who is greatly rever'd in this iſland, they maintain their ground with great vigour, and defy the empty efforts of their adverſaries, tho' they at the ſame time look upon them as their maſters.

The former, finding the latter began to triumph over them, publiſh'd ſome years ſince a large volume in quarto, intitled,

intitled, *The murthers committed by the ſurgeons*; containing a liſt of thoſe they either maim'd or butcher'd during a century. The ſurgeons, by way of reprisal, publiſh'd a liſt of thoſe whom the phyſicians had diſpatch'd in the courſe of ten years, which we are told ſwell'd to twenty volumes in folio, on a very ſmall letter; with the ſignatures of the ſeveral Relations of thoſe they aſſaſſinated in the margin. The publication of thoſe twenty volumes, occaſioned by their inteſtine feuds, has prejudic'd them in the minds of ſeveral inhabitants of the neighbouring iſlands, who conſider them as man-ſlayers. However, they ſtill maintain their reputation, and people yet confide in them, the reaſon of which is, that the love of life is ſtronger than a thouſand arguments or experiments; beſides, the cure of one ſingle perſon, obliterates the remembrance of a million they have ſent out of the world.

After all, it muſt be confeſs'd, that ſometimes, 'tis not their fault, if a patient does not recover; however,

ever, the world is ſo partial, that they would have them cure every one that comes under their hands, as tho' life and death were abſolutely in their power, and it were poſſible for them to change the decrees of fate. Theſe people have a kind of *Alcoran* or *Talmud*, the precepts of which they follow to a tittle; their ſtatutes not allowing them to deviate from it. Lord have mercy upon thoſe whom this *Alcoran* or *Talmud* ſentences to die!

Beſides theſe ſurgeons who are for ever rebelling againſt the phyſicians; this iſland is infeſted by another kind of refractory mutineers, who are equally abhorr'd by both. Theſe are your quacks, that practice phyſic in a fraudulent manner, who are treated like our pedlars that ſell without a licenſe; when theſe are catch'd in the fact, their uſual puniſhment, is, to be forc'd to ſwallow down all the aloes, mercury, and pills that is found in their houſes. Further, we are told, that thoſe phyſicians exclaim againſt celibacy, which they are ſuppos'd,

pos'd to do either from a conſcientious, or political motive, in order to attone for the injury which their art does to nature.

The men who contribute chiefly to the wealth of this iſland, are the inhabitants of a neighbouring one, lying weſt-ward, whoſe government is wholly hierarchical, that is, entirely ſuperintended by the prieſts of the god *BELLY*, call'd in their language *BARATROGULO*. This ridiculous deity is repreſented in his temple under a monſtrous ſhape. 'Tis a ſhort ſtatue, but vaſtly corpulent and unweildy, whoſe prominent belly is four ells from ſide to ſide. Its goggle-eyes are very large, in compariſon of its head, which is narrow, flat, and earleſs; its jaw-bones appear very wide, and are arm'd with ſharp-pointed teeth; and in its mouth, which is made to gape continually, by means of a ſpring conceal'd in the ſtomach, is heard a noiſe made by the chattering of the teeth.

The

The God is ſeated before a table, on which the ſuperſtitious people are continually placing, in a moſt devout manner, viands and dainties of all kinds, to feed the prieſts of this temple, who boaſt a moſt delicious corpulency, and double chin; and in ſhort are the very picture of the canons in our cathedrals. One very odd circumſtance is, that they are what we call *Ventriloqui*; for always when they are conſulted, they never give their anſwers by the mouth, but by the belly. In a word, they are heavy and indolent, and are generally found with victuals before them. 'Tis here theſe devout drones treat of all affairs relating to religion or government; here they frequently chaunt the praiſes of the God they worſhip; nor are they aſham'd to aſſert, that the god *BELLY* is the inventor of all arts and ſciences; and that he firſt taught men to labour in order to procure themſelves the neceſſaries of life. But tho' they won't give themſelves the trouble of ſetting a pattern to others, they yet earneſtly exhort the common people to

be

be laborious, and diſpenſe none but the rich from working.

To conclude, the chief trades that are exercis'd in this iſland, are all relative to feaſting and good cheer, and it abounds with cooks of all ſorts. The prieſts, elect annually a doge or dean, who is choſen out of their chapter: however, this dignity is beſtow'd on the moſt deſerving; and he who eats the greateſt quantity, and gobbles it down faſteſt, has the honour of being elected. The country abounds with paſture ground, which feeds a multitude of cattle, and is ſtor'd with game of every kind. But notwithſtanding this, a dangerous diſtemper reigns perpetually in this country, which, had it not been for the conſtant uſe of rhubarb, caſſia, manna, ſena, antimony, and the ſyringe, would have long ſince made a dreadful havock among the inhabitants, and been particularly fatal to the god who is the object of their worſhip.

Is it poſſible, ſays I, interrupting him, for theſe indefatigable eaters not to fall a prey to their voracious appetites?

tites? But then, why don't these glutonous wretches; these slaves to sensuality, prefer a salutary regimen, to the frequent use of nauseous potions, which physic administers?

To prevent, says he, their excessive corpulency from throwing them into mortal diseases, and especially apoplexies, they use an excellent preservative four times a year; which is the getting able surgeons to take down their fat. These, by slight incisions in the most musculous parts, by corrosive topical remedies, by repeated rubbings, and the use of a catholicon, diminish their enormous size; and thereby dispense them from the dreadful necessity of being abstemious.

With regard to the preparation of purgative remedies, which they are often oblig'd to take, to remove the obstructions and suffocations with which they are oppress'd, 'tis done in such a manner, as no way interferes with their sensuality. Manna, milk-thistle, and scamony, or bind-weed, are boil'd in their broths; they have

have a cullis of rhubarb, a fricaſſee of julips, pidgeons cook'd with ſena, pills toſs'd up in a ragout, a rump of beef larded with caſſia, a ſhoulder powder'd with mineral and vegetable kermes; ſallets made of the flowers of the peach-tree and follicle, ſeaſon'd with antimoniz'd ſalt, ſoluble-tartar, oyl of vitriol, and vinegar of ſquills; *coloquintida* pies bak'd with quinces, and the cruſt made of *ricinus vulgaris* or indian pine-nuts; cheeſes and hams impregnated with *Epſom* ſalt, *ſal armoniac* and *polychreſton*; and laſtly, preſerves of elder, ſweet-almonds and province roſes. All theſe are ſo learnedly prepar'd, and ſo wonderfully ſeaſon'd by their cooks, who have great skill in pharmacy, that they are purg'd without knowing it; and perceive it only by their ſtrong reachings; their breaking wind both ways more frequently, than uſual; and their copious and violent ſtools, which they forward by a few doſes of tobacco. Before they go to reſt, they frequently drink a broth made

of

of henbane, mandrake and *ſtramonium*, this throws them into a ſound ſleep, and regales them with viſionary banquets.

CHAP. V.

The author narrowly eſcapes being devour'd by bears in the iſland of Letatiſpons. *The reception he meets with from the inhabitants. He lives among them. His converſation with* Taifaco.

AFter we had reſided ſome time in *Eſtate's-land*, where we refreſh'd ourſelves, and ſeveral of our crew who were ſick recover'd their health, we took leave of the *Dutchmen* who had receiv'd us ſo courteouſly. Theſe gave us plenty of proviſions, and made us promiſe to call upon them at our return from the *South-Sea*, in order to bring them ſeveral things they wanted, which we hop'd ſuch of our *European* veſſels would furniſh us with, as carry on

on a private trade on the coaſts of *Chili* and *Peru*.

We then ſet ſail the 17th of *Auguſt*, 1718, and directed our courſe to the ſtraits of *Magellan*, which we paſs'd very happily, and as the current ran vaſtly ſtrong, in a ſhort time. After leaving *Cape Victory* to our ſtarboard, and then the iſland *Madre de Dios*, being got off cape *Diego Callego*, it blew ſouth-eaſt, upon which we reſolv'd to make a little to ſeaward, in order to attempt to diſcover ſome iſlands, in that part of the *Magellanic* ſea, in which our geographers have not placed any. I hinted this to our captain and the chief officers, and at the ſame time took notice, that it was inglorious for the *Europeans*, not to have made any diſcovery in thoſe parts, for theſe fifty years laſt paſt. Alas! I ſoon had reaſon to repent my giving this fatal counſel.

Being in about the 45th degree of ſouthern latitude, and the 269th of longitude, we diſcover'd an iſland

which appear'd to us large, and worthy of being viſited.

We did not wonder that the *European* veſſels which go to *Chili* and *Peru*, had not yet diſcover'd it, becauſe they uſually coaſt along that pacific ocean; and are in no danger of ſtorms, theſe being as rarely met with as rocks in thoſe parts.

Being come within two leagues of that land, call'd, as I afterwards found, the iſland of the *Letatiſpons*, we caſt anchor, and our captain with ſome *Dutch* officers, ſeveral of our *Portugueze*, Capt. *Harrington* and myſelf, got into the long-boat, and were row'd ſafe to ſhore. We firſt found a ſolitary place, cover'd with tufted trees; but afterwards perceiv'd a little beaten path, whence we concluded that the iſland was inhabited. We follow'd the track, keeping cloſe together, and went near half a league up it without meeting either man or beaſt. I got a conſiderable way before the reſt, having a brave young *Portugueze* in my company, who lov'd walking

ing as much as myſelf, and was no leſs impatient to gratify his curioſity. We left the path, and going up a pretty ſteep mountain, the better to view the country, we left our company behind in the valley.

We were ſcarce got to the top, when we ſaw ſeveral bears of an enormous ſize coming down on the left ſide of the mountain. Our companions ſeeing them, did not dare to advance forward, or ſtay till they were come up, and therefore thought it would be beſt to go back. We were then for coming down the mountain, as they did, but were intercepted by the bears. Their number and ſize, notwithſtanding that we were arm'd with ſabres and muskets, terrified us very much. In this dreadful dilemna, recollecting I had heard, that the way to eſcape thoſe fierce creatures, was to fall upon one's belly, and lie motionleſs on the ground, and not diſcover the leaſt ſign of life, I reſolv'd to do ſo, and bid my companion do the ſame, which he did accordingly. The bears came

up to us, and finding we did not ſtir, they went away without doing us any harm. In the mean time, our companions, who ran as faſt as their feet would carry them, ſeeing us at a diſtance extended on the ground, in the midſt of thoſe cruel beaſts, and ſuppoſing we were kill'd, return'd on board; ſo that we were left in an unknown country, abandon'd to grief and deſpair.

I ſaid to *Silva*, for ſo was the young *Portugueze* call'd, that it would be proper for us to remove from that dangerous place, and follow the beaten road. We trac'd it for five hours, without meeting ſo much as one human creature or a ſingle habitation. At laſt, about ſun-ſet, we met a man who ſeem'd to be about eight and twenty. He wore a cap made of red morocco leather, ſhap'd like a cone, the ſides whereof were ſett off, and faſtned with a claſp; a kind of ſurtoot made of green ſattin deſcended almoſt to his feet; under which ſurtoot he wore a red waiſtcoat, and

breeches

breeches and ſtockings of the ſame colour, which were tied together. We made him a very low bow, and going up to him, gave him to underſtand by the moſt expreſſive geſtures, that we were two unhappy ſtrangers, who ſtood in need of his ſuccour. But how great was our ſurprize when he ſpake *Spaniſh* to us, and told us, we had an *European* air! he ask'd us what part of *Europe* we were born in, and what chance had brought us into a country ſo little known to the reſt of the world. We anſwer'd him in the ſame tongue, that one of us was a native of *England* and the other of *Portugal*; and then acquainted him with the long voyage we had made; the reaſon of our landing in that iſland; and the fatal accident which had ſeparated us from the reſt of our comrades.

Unhappy travellers! ſays he, be not dejected becauſe you are forc'd to ſtay in this iſland, for you are got among a moſt beneficent people, whoſe chief law is hoſpitality, and aſſiſting the wretched. Follow me, ſays he;

I'll carry you to a village that is not far from hence. Suppreſs the grief and anxiety that appear in your countenances; I'll take you into my own houſe, and depend upon't my wife, my children and grand-children will be overjoy'd to ſee and ſuccour you to the utmoſt of their power.

Overjoy'd at this compliment, we return'd our unknown patron a thouſand thanks for his generous offer; but cou'd not think how it were poſſible for ſo young a man to have great grand-children. In the mean time we walk'd towards the village, and in the way, ask'd our guide whether he were born in *Spain* or *America*. I was, ſays he, born in the village to which you are now going; and don't wonder if I ſpeak *Spaniſh*; for I was in *Chili* about threeſcore and ten years ago, and there learnt the *Spaniſh* language. I am glad you was not born in a country, the natives of which, fir'd with an inſatiable thirſt of wealth, deſtroy'd a million of ſouls in *Chili*, which was once the fineſt ſpot upon earth, but is now wild,

and

and very thin of inhabitants, and subject to the *Spaniards*, who govern it with a rod of iron. 'Tis a great happineſs for us that we are ſecur'd from their tyranny; and, we thank Heaven, that the moſt valuable metals in our iſland are copper and iron. But, the advantages we enjoy are vaſtly preferable to imaginary riches; we breathe a pure air; our fruitful ſoil produces wholeſome food, which enables us to live to a great age; and our lives are unruffled with cares and infirmities. In other countries, people die of age; here, my countrymen, after having liv'd a long term of years, die with youth; but this is a paradox, you will comprehend and admire, after you have liv'd ſome time among us.

We arriv'd at the village, which, it being dark, we entred privately. Our guide, whoſe name was *Taiſaco* as we afterwards found, going thro' it, carried us to his houſe, which was large, and immediately preſented us to a boy dreſs'd in black ſattin clothes, whom we took to be about ten or twelve

years of age, for whom he ſeem'd to have the higheſt reſpect. This boy, who had a magiſterial air, and whoſe judgment ſeem'd to be ripe, receiv'd us with great civility; and after *Taiſaco* had told him our caſe, he gave orders that we ſhould be well us'd. At the ſame inſtant the whole family came about us. *Taiſaco* pointing to a woman, who look'd to be thirty, told me ſhe was his wife; and daughter to the perſon, to whom he had juſt before preſented us. We bow'd to the ground, and begg'd her to indulge us her protection, and honour us with her favour. Her husband, who was pleas'd to be our interpreter, told her we were *Europeans* that had been abandon'd on the coaſt by our companions, thro' the dread they were under of being devour'd by the wolves of the foreſt of *Arisba*, who had oblig'd them to run to their canoos. She anſwer'd with the utmoſt politeneſs, that ſhe thank'd her husband for the honour he procur'd her; that ſhe was deeply affected with our misfortunes, and

would

would do all that lay in her power to make us happy. At the ſame time *Taiſaco* bid his daughter come forward, who ſeem'd to be about five and forty; who curtzing very modeſtly, preſented her children to us, the oldeſt whereof ſeem'd to be of the ſame age as his grand-father, and older than his great grand-father.

Silva and I gaz'd one upon the other, but cou'd not poſſibly conceive this genealogical order; upon which *Silva* whiſper'd in my ear; Theſe people have a mind to be merry with us; they certainly take us for a couple of ſtupidly-credulous fellows; I wonder how long they intend to joke upon us in this manner. Being more us'd to ſurprizing incidents, and having much more experience than he, I deſir'd him to ſuſpend his judgment, till we knew more of the matter.

Then *Taiſaco* carried us into a room, where ſervants were waiting to bathe us, and give us clean linnen and ſilk robes after the faſhion of the country. This pleas'd us mightily, we being ſo dirty,

dirty, that we were aſham'd to appear in ſo frightful a pickle before the ladies. We were bath'd in perfum'd waters; and being dreſs'd, we waited upon the company, and a moment after were told dinner was ſerv'd up.

Immediately they open'd the door of a large dining-room, that was finely illuminated. The grand-children walk'd into it firſt; then the ſons and daughters; afterwards the grand-father and grand-mother: and laſt of all, the young great grand-father, who taking us by the hand, ſat down firſt at table, placing me at his right hand, and my companion at his left. As the children walk'd into the dining-room before their fathers and mothers, and had not offer'd to let us go in before them, I ſuppos'd they had done this by way of compliment, a circumſtance that no ways ſurpriz'd me, as I knew it was the cuſtom in ſeveral countries.

Taiſaco, who ſat next me, interpreted to me in *Spaniſh* moſt of the particulars that were mention'd at table. Among other things, they diſcours'd of

a wedding, which was to be celebrated ſhortly, between a man of thirty and a woman of threeſcore. They pitied this woman mightily for marrying a man of that age, ſince he, according to the courſe of nature, muſt feel a decay for thirty years together. They alſo ſpoke of a man of threeſcore, who was going to marry a girl of five and twenty; and ſaid, ſhe was either too young or too old for her intended husband, who, they affirm'd, ought to have made choice of a woman of threeſcore and ten, or a girl of fifteen. What a paradox was this to us, who were unacquainted with the ſingular prerogative the inhabitants of this country enjoy'd!

Now, tho' I cannot exactly tell what it was we eat, nor give any manner of idea of the taſte of the victuals, I yet ſhould be heartily ſorry the reader ſhould not know that we far'd deliciouſly. But 'tis certain we eat no fleſh; for as theſe people believe the tranſmigration of ſouls, they never kill any animals but ſuch as are noxious;

and

and theſe, they never dare to feed upon.

'Twas in this entertainment that I was inform'd of their notion on this head; for having ask'd *Taiſaco* what kind of victuals we had eat of, which had ſo exquiſite a taſte; he told me, that our repaſt conſiſted wholly of the herbs and roots of the country, which are of a ſingular kind, and were dreſs'd after a peculiar way. We, ſays he, don't imitate the *Spaniards* and other *Europeans* in their cuſtom of eating animals; a fatal cuſtom, which, in ſome meaſure, has made the ſhedding of human blood familiar to them. Are not brutes endued with ſouls? What right has man to divorce them from their bodies, and make their ſubſtance ſubſervient to the nouriſhment of his own, ſince the earth indulges him with a liberal hand, a numberleſs multitude of roots, herbs and fruits, which he is allow'd to feed upon.

Silva liſtned to this diſcourſe with a diſdainful air, and diſcover'd his ignorance

rance by an awkard ſmile. As he was wholly uninform'd by education, the prejudices he had imbib'd in his infancy, compietely refuted, as he imagin'd, *Taſſaco*'s doctrine. As to myſelf, who had ſtudied philoſophy very young, and paid no regard to vulgar and national ideas, unleſs they agreed with that reaſon which heaven has implanted in the ſoul; methoughts our patron's doctrine deſerv'd to be refuted in another manner.

I firſt explain'd to him the two ſyſtems eſtabliſh'd among us with regard to the ſouls of brutes. The firſt, ſays I, which is but little follow'd, does not allow them the leaſt intellectual ſenſation or knowledge. According to thoſe who follow this opinion, brutes are inanimate Beings, entirely dead to pleaſure and pain, to fear or love. You ſee that according to this ſyſtem, the charity you have for them is very ill plac'd; and that 'tis as lawful to put them to death, as to fell trees, to cut up herbs, or pull up plants. But as this ſyſtem, which conſiders brutes

as

as ſo many machines, is patroniz'd by none but a ſet of whimſical people, who are wholly unattentive to the voice of nature; I never take advantage of this, to juſtify the cuſtom we have of killing and eating animals. The opinion which prevails moſt univerſally at this day, and which indeed appears the moſt rational, is, that brutes are endued with ſouls, but of an inferior kind to thoſe of men, as it neither reflects or reſolves; is fix'd by objects; govern'd imperiouſly by its paſſions; and abſolutely ſway'd by all its impulſes. 'Tis manifeſt then, that brutes are vaſtly inferior to men, ſince the ſoul of theſe thinks, reflects, compares, and reſolves; has a full power over all its actions; the faculty of diſtinguiſhing between virtue and vice, and the liberty of chuſing which it thinks proper.

Tho' I were to grant you all this, ſays *Taiſaco*, I yet cannot ſee how any inference can be drawn from thence, to favour the privileges you aſcribe to yourſelves, of killing and feeding upon

on animals. If brutes, ſays I, are ſo much inferior to us, they are of a different ſpecies from ourſelves, and conſequently we are not bound by any obligations to be tender of their lives. For this very reaſon, ſays *Taiſaco*, you ought to ſpare them. 'Tis mean to take advantage of the weakneſs of the brute creation, and oppreſs them merely becauſe you are ſtronger than they. Why do you treat them thus, ſince you yourſelves would be very unwilling to be us'd in that manner by them? You hate thoſe cruel beaſts, that ruſh'd upon you near the foreſt of *Arisba*, and had like to have torn you to pieces; we likewiſe look upon them as our enemies, and therefore don't ſcruple to kill them whenever they come in our way; it being natural to kill one's adverſary: But is it juſt to entertain the ſame opinion with regard to harmleſs and innocent animals, who never do the leaſt injury to man; and eſpecially the feathery creation, whoſe plumage is as delightful to the eye, as their harmony is to the ear?

I anſwer'd, that as all animals in general had been created for the uſe of man, it conſequently was lawful to kill and eat them; that providence had eſtabliſh'd a regular ſubordination among the ſeveral ſpecies of animals, which was the reaſon why ſome ſerv'd for food to others; that the ſouls of brutes periſh'd with their bodies, whereas that of man was immortal, ſo that, properly ſpeaking, they reſembled us only in the organization of their bodies. Then *Taiſaco* attempted to prove, according to the Pythagorean principle, that the ſouls of brutes don't periſh with their Bodies; but all his arguments appear'd to me mere ſuppoſitions, wholly unſupported by proofs; and indeed, I puzzled him very much, when I prov'd to him, that the ſyſtem of the tranſmigration of ſouls, was inconſiſtent with the wiſdom of the creator.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Queſtions propos'd to the author, and his anſwers. He is told that the inhabitants of the iſland of Letaliſpons *enjoy the happy prerogative of growing young again.*

HAving diſcours'd on this ſubject till ſupper was ended, we roſe up from table, and were deſir'd to walk into a flower-garden, the moon ſhining very bright, in order to breathe the cool and fragrant air. The inhabitants of this country, are, by an expreſs law, enjoyn'd to walk an hour after meals. Being firmly perſuaded that this exerciſe is a great friend to digeſtion; they look upon this inſtitution as a very wiſe one, as indeed they do all the reſt, moſt of which relate to the preſervation and prolonging of life.

The ladies having deſir'd us, with great civility, to relate ſome of the adventures we had met with in our tra-

vels, I gratified their curiosity by *Taifaco*'s assistance, who always was my interpreter. They listned with pleasure to the account I gave them of what had befall'n me in the island of *Babilary*, and ask'd me a thousand questions about it. They enquir'd particularly, whether the indolence and effeminacy, into which the superiority of the females had plung'd the other sex, was not prejudicial to those very women, who triumph'd over them.

Those men, said they, who are of an effeminate cast, are not men; surely, they must perform the several functions of their sex in a most wretched manner; and we may presume their country is not very populous. I was surpriz'd to find these ladies hit at once upon the very circumstance in which the government of *Babilary* is defective; and this gave me a most advantageous idea of the sharpness, as well as solidity of their understandings. I answer'd, that indeed their island had been very thin of inhabitants ever since that revolution; but that the ambition of the women

was

was ſuch, that they look'd upon this diſadvantage as very trifling, and imagin'd they might eaſily remedy it, by the privilege they aſſum'd of divorcing their husbands, whenever age, conſtitution, or behaviour rendred them obnoxious. This privilege, ſays I, which the women have arrogated, keeps their husbands in awe, and obliges them to ſhew them as much reſpect as if they were ſo many lovers. But then, the only advantage they reap from all their complaiſance and aſſiduity to pleaſe their wives, is, to ſuſpend for ſome time, the divorce with which they are perpetually threatned, the fatal period whereof happens after a certain number of years. For very few of theſe are ſo conſtant, or have the courage to keep their husbands when once they grow in years; nay, their very old women are mighty fond of changing their husbands.

The ladies cou'd not forbear ſmiling, when the youngeſt of *Taiſaco*'s granddaughters, who ſeem'd to be about fourteen, deſir'd her grand-papa to ask me at what age women generally married

in *Tibet*. I forbear repeating the expreſſion ſhe employ'd on this occaſion: words which raiſe a bluſh in our language, are indifferent in theirs; they having no ſuch thing as an indecent phraſe among them. *Taiſaco* interpreted her queſtion exactly, and I anſwer'd it, by telling him that their women generally married at three years of age. Heavens! ſays ſhe, with ſome warmth, had I been a native of that country, I ſhould have been a wife theſe eleven years! Oh, ſays I, I have ſeen ſome of your age that had buried four husbands, but then they were far from boaſting ſo many charms as you are miſtreſs of. How happy, ſays ſhe, wou'd thoſe women be, if, as they are ripe ſo ſoon, it were poſſible for them to live as long as we do, and afterwards revive in all the bloom of youth.

'Twas then *Taiſaco*, who before had not given me the leaſt light into this matter, told me, that in his country, men and women generally liv'd to an hundred and twenty years of age; that their vigour did not decay till their

ſixtieth year; after which, ſo far from waxing old like the reſt of men, they grew young again, and returned to the bloom of life. We cannot ſay, continued *Taiſaco*, whether the inhabitants of this iſland, are a peculiar kind of creatures, to whom the eternal ſovereign of the world, has indulg'd this happy prerogative; or whether we owe it to the pureneſs of the air, the ſalubrity of the plants and fruits; the regular and undiſturb'd life we lead, or our laws, which prohibit us either to uſe too much exerciſe; to be too ſedentary, or give ourſelves a prey to the paſſions. However this be, 'tis a wonderful advantage we have enjoy'd from time immemorial; an advantage which gives us a ſuperiority over all other nations. Look upon me, ſays he; I am turn'd of fourſcore and ten, and my father you ſee there, is one hundred and nine.

Silva, upon hearing what he laſt ſaid, fix'd his eyes attentively upon this little great grand-father of one hundred and nine; and examin'd his features

ſo narrowly, that he at laſt diſcovering in his juvenile and even blooming countenance, ſome almoſt imperceptible furrows, which time had made; he then whiſper'd me in the ear, and made me obſerve it alſo. His skin ſeem'd a little ſhrivel'd, and was not flush'd with that vital juice, which is ſeen in a young countenance; he look'd like fruit gather'd over night, which in the morning loſes the bloom it boaſted upon the tree. The compariſon we made between him and his great grandſon, plainly ſhew'd this difference. Tho' *Taiſaco* himſelf had a healthy, freſh and vigorous complexion, nevertheleſs, when it was narrowly ſurvey'd, it plainly appear'd to be a little worn. He reſembled in one ſenſe to ſuch of my countrywomen, as are fond of pleaſing in ſpight of years; ladies who have the art of putting off twenty years every morning, and of reſuming them every night when they go to bed.

I don't wonder, ſays I to *Taiſaco*, that the air you breathe, the eaſy and unruffled

ruffled life you enjoy, and the regular courſe of diet you obſerve, ſhould make you live longer than the reſt of men; for theſe ſeem to do all that lies in their power to ſhorten their days. What ſurprizes me, is, to find that old age, with reſpect to you, is but a kind of eclipſe, which you retrograde as it were; and recover the ſeveral years you had loſt, by returning back to the flower of youth and even childhood itſelf.

Light, ſays *Taiſaco*, is an emblem of our life; it dawns every morning in our hemiſphere; it increaſes inſenſibly as the lamp from which it flows riſes higher; and after the ſun has been at the meridian, it leſſens imperceptibly, and returns to the ſame degree, the ſame point, where it appear'd at its riſing. You wou'd not, ſays he, be ſurpriz'd at any of theſe things, did you not confine the power of the eternal ſovereign of the univerſe, and imagine, that nature obſerves the ſame laws in all places: but this regularity and uniformity, you aſcribe to her,

ſuppoſes her barren and impotent. As for inſtance, had we never ſeen any but our own people, we could not have believ'd there were men in the world, who died of age.

What! ſays I, interrupting him, don't all animals and plants die of age; and is not this ſufficient to make us conclude, that human creatures ſubmit to the ſame fate? We, ſays *Taſſaço*, make a great difference between old age, and what we may call antientneſs. Animals and plants die, like us, of antientneſs; but not of old age, unleſs ſome cauſe changes this uſual courſe of nature. 'Tis ſo with men, whenever they don't obſerve the laws of health, which have long ſince been eſtabliſh'd in our country; if we labour too immoderately, or are over ſedentary; if we don't curb our paſſions, which light up and nouriſh a conſuming fire in our bodies; we then always die, recent, as it were, or old, but never of antientneſs.

We then heard the ſound of a kind of violin, upon which all the company

return'd

return'd into the room, where we had ſupp'd. *Taifaco* inform'd us, that his countrymen always danc'd every night after ſupper; and this, he ſaid, was not the moſt inconſiderable of their laws with regard to health; and added, that the ladies would be mightily diverted to ſee us dance after the *European* manner. *Silva* and I anſwer'd, that we would not make the leaſt ſcruple to oblige them in that particular, but deſir'd them to begin, in order that we muſt firſt ſee the nature of their dances, and be encourag'd by their example. Then the youngeſt of the family open'd this kind of family-ball, in which all danc'd ſucceſſively; now ſingle, now in couples; ſometimes four, and by and by all together; and ever with the utmoſt regularity and grace. It now being our turn to dance, I deſir'd the violin to play again a certain air which pleas'd me, the movement whereof was in the nature of a jig; and the whole company were mightily pleas'd. As for *Silva*, he danc'd a double ſtep, and was more applauded

applauded for the lightneſs of his heels than his air.

Then the ladies took their leave and withdrew. As for *Silva* and I, *Taiſaco* carried us into an apartment, conſiſting of two rooms, the furniture of which was plain, but very neat, and the beds were mighty ſoft. This, ſays he, is your abode, where I wiſh you may enjoy the ſweeteſt ſlumbers. Sleep in peace, amiable ſtrangers, and baniſh every gloomy reflection from your minds.

Having made this compliment, he ſaluted us civilly, and bid us good night. As *Silva* and I were very much tir'd, after returning thanks to providence for its great care of us, we went to bed, and immediately fell into a ſound ſleep, and did not awake till late the next morning.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Taiſaco *explains to the author the laws of health eſtabliſh'd among the* Letaliſpons.

THE refin'd aliments we had fed upon ſo heartily the night before, for we were very hungry, did not at all diſturb our reſt in the night. We had now been awake ſome time, when *Taiſaco* came to us, and after having ask'd us in a very obliging manner how we had ſlept, he order'd breakfaſt to be brought up; and when this was over, he propos'd our taking a walk to a very agreeable place, where he aſſur'd us we ſhould meet with a great deal of pleaſure.

Immediately we left our apartment and follow'd him. The firſt thing he made us obſerve, was the rural beauty of ſeveral houſes we ſaw in the way. We, ſays he, never build cities; I am told there are ſome in *Europe* which are of a vaſt extent. As for myſelf, who

who have only ſeen thoſe ſmall ones, which the *Spaniards* have built in *Chili*; I ſuppoſe that the great cities in *Europe*, are rather a confus'd heap of priſons and dungeons, than a range of edifices built in a commodious manner. How is it poſſible for you to be calm and undiſturb'd, when you're ſurrounded with ſuch a numberleſs multitude of men? Are you not inceſſantly peſter'd with viſits and affairs; frequently thoſe of other people? Methinks cities are to men as cages to birds. The celeſtial fire which animates our boſoms, will not be pent up; it pants after the cooling breeze and embowering ſhade; 'tis there it has leiſure to meditate with freedom, and is more ſecure from thoſe prejudices which the paſſions ſuggeſt. In large cities, the numberleſs vices, ſo far from being palpable, muſt inſinuate themſelves in all places unperceiv'd. There virtue muſt be obſcur'd, and generally be deſtroy'd by deprav'd examples. A country-life is made up of exerciſe and action. That which whets the appetite,

ſtrengthens

ſtrengthens the body, and makes it more robuſt. Our laws are therefore very prudent in forbidding us to build cities. Were we to imitate the *Europeans* in that particular, we probably ſhould ſoon loſe the privilege which is indulg'd us, of living a long courſe of years, and the happy advantage of growing young again.

Taiſaco then enquir'd into our laws of health. We anſwer'd, there were none eſtabliſh'd among us; and that our Legiſlators had never once thought of ſearching any method of prolonging our lives; ſo far from it, that moſt of our laws were calculated to ſhorten its period, by the difficulties they brought upon us. Beſides, ſays I, we value and eſteem a man who ſleeps little, works much, leads a life of ſeverity, defies the inclemencies of the weather, heat, cold, hunger, thirſt; and who feeds upon nothing but juiceleſs food, which heats his blood and prejudices his health.

You don't then, ſays *Taiſaco*, conſider life, as the foundation of all happineſs,

pineſs, and health as the greateſt advantage man can boaſt? Did the eternal ſovereign of the univerſe indulge you life, that you ſhould make ſo bad a uſe of it? Have you no more regard for this cœleſtial gift? We, ſays he, who look upon life as the greateſt bleſſing, do all our endeavours to prolong it, and to detain the ſoul, as long as poſſible, in the body it actually animates, for which purpoſe we have excellent Precepts.

We then asked, what was the general purport of thoſe laws, and whether they were very numerous? They don't, ſays he, include above four or five articles, which I'll explain to you in a few words. The firſt law relates to the air we breathe. By this important article, we are expreſly commanded to live in that place, whoſe air agrees beſt with our conſtitutions, whether it be our native air or not. For the air we firſt drew, cannot be wholeſome, unleſs it has that degree of temperature which agrees with our conſtitutions. We have thermometers, barometers,

rometers, hygrometers and anemometers, by which we diſcover the quality of the air that ſurrounds us; and to find out that which ſuits us ſtill better, there are skilful men among us, who, by obſerving attentively how thoſe who conſult them breathe, pronounce infallibly what kind of air their conſtitution requires. 'Tis prov'd, that the fermentation which is found in all fluid ſubſtances, is owing to the air: judge then the great influence the air has over us, ſince it enters not only at the mouth, and the reſt of the natural conduits; but alſo pervades the outward pores of the skin. And indeed, when we compare the changes which air produces in the animal œconomy, with thoſe which food occaſions; we find that ſuch as are caus'd by the former, are much more conſiderable. We are, in general, commanded to breathe a wholeſome air; for which reaſon, we, as I told you before, are eſpecially forbid to build cities, where vapours neceſſarily ariſe, which are clogg'd with heavy corpuſcles, capable of corrupting

rupting the whole maſs of blood. Too ſharp an air, like that of high mountains, may be very pernicious; becauſe, as the column has not height enough in thoſe places, and conſequently renders the preſſure of the air very weak, it ſwells the lungs, and makes one breathe ſhort. I ſhall here, for the ſake of the curious reader, obſerve, that in this country, water is us'd in barometers, and not mercury; agreeable to the opinion of the learned *Boyle*, who tells us, he had found by experiments, that the weight of the atmoſphere is much more ſenſible in the barometer, when water, than when mercury is us'd for that purpoſe.

The ſecond article, ſays he, relates to food. I have already told you, that chymiſtry has taught us the art to refine our aliments, and reduce them to a kind of quinteſſence. We are not indeed abſolutely forbid to feed upon herbs, roots, pulſe and fruits, ſuch as we receive them from the hand of nature, after having dreſs'd them in a proper manner; but then,

then, we are commanded not to eat too much, nor to feed upon too great a variety, ſince this makes fermentation more difficult; we then digeſt flower; and the chyle, being compoſed of too great a number of heterogeneous particles, cannot eaſily complete that perfect mixture, ſo requiſite to nouriſh every part of the body. With regard to liquids, we never drink cold water, but always mix it with hot. I know that 'tis more agreeable in the midſt of ſummer, to drink not only cold water, but ſuch as is cool'd with ice; but we find that ice, inſtead of quenching the thirſt, rather inflames it; that it's chill cloſes the pores of the palate, and ſtops the ſalival ſprings, whence the radical moiſture flows which tempers the warmth of the blood.

The third article relates to bodily exerciſes. By our laws we are commanded to proportion our exerciſe to the food we eat; ſo that if we eat little, we don't do much work; and on the other ſide, if we labour much, we eat a large quantity. From

this judicious harmony between labour and food, 'tis that we are ſo ſeldom troubled with diſeaſes; and are enabled to enjoy the ſingular prerogative which nature has indulg'd us, of returning to the bloom of life. The motion of the muſcles, excites the natural heat; aſſiſts the circulation of the blood; helps the diſtribution of the aliments; prevents and removes all obſtructions, and increaſes perſpiration.

The fourth article relates to ſitting up a nights and ſleep. The laws forbid our inverting the order which nature has preſcrib'd, and command us to reſt in the night, and work in the day; and to let the proportion between them be as three to one. For if ſleep be neceſſary to relax the fibres, and eaſe and refreſh the body, when it has been fatigued with the labours of the day; 'tis certain, that nothing contributes more to weaken it than too much ſleep, this waſting the ſpirits more than exerciſe.

The fifth article, ſays he, relates to the irregular impulſes of the ſoul, which are as contrary to health, as moderate

moderate bodily exercise is advantageous to it. To prevent the fatal effects of these, we are taught from our infancy to curb the passions, and suppress self-love from which they always flow. As anger acts more upon the body than the other passions, 'tis punish'd with greater severity; for 'tis on these occasions that the exasperated soul, uniting all its strength in an instant, drives the blood and spirits to the extreme parts, and fires the heart, whose systoles becomes so violent, by the impetuous efflux of animal spirits, that the blood being thus hurried into the arteries, instead of entring the veins, extravasates in some measure, and occasions that instantaneous flush which is seen in the countenance of a very angry man. The very contrary happens in fear, for then all the fibres in general are contracted, and the blood is brought back again towards the heart through the arteries; whence it is, that people under any terror are pale. As therefore, there is so great a mechanical tye between soul and body, the impulses of the former

act upon the whole mass of fluids, and thereby invert the natural oeconomy. We have therefore great reason to controul our passions betimes, since they have so mighty an influence upon the constitution; and to make the practical study of moral precepts, the grand article in our education. Above all, we exhort our youth to indulge themselves in the pleasures of love with moderation, since excess, on these occasions, is very shameful and prejudicial.

But you, *Europeans*, says he, on the contrary, only oblige your young people to study several languages; and bestow much more care in cultivating their genius, than in moulding the heart, and eradicating the passions; nay, you often prejudice their health, by forcing them to study immoderately. Upon pretence of making them imprint deep in their memories, the traces of a numberless multitude of words and grammatical rules, you shake the tender and delicate fibres of the brain; and when their memory is overcharg'd, it blunts the imagination and weakens the judg-

judgment; and the knowledge which you generally inſtill into their minds by dread, according to the * *Spaniſh* cuſtom, caſts ſuch a damp upon the mind, during the reſt of their lives, as quite inervates it. 'Tis not that we deſpiſe learning, but then we apply ourſelves to it with moderation. A medium is no leſs enjoyn'd us with regard to the ſtudy of the ſciences, than food; ſince too cloſe an application to books, extinguiſhes the native heat, and interrupts and diverts the courſe of the animal ſpirits. The head, which is the ſeat of the ſoul, and the palace of ſcience as it were, being thus heated by the uninterrupted action of the fibres, and the habitual tenſion of the nerves, ceaſes to diſtribute the vital ſpirits, which all flow from it, into the ſeveral members; whence a dangerous weakneſs and dejection ariſes, and a kind of ſtupor, which haſtens our diſſolution.

* The Spaniſh *proverb is*, La ſciencia por lo ſangre entra, *that is*, knowledge enters by the blood.

CHAP. VIII.

Learning of the Letaliſpons. *Reflections on latin verſe and rhime.*

WE were equally pleas'd and attentive to the judicious and uſeful maxims which *Taiſaco* ſet before us; but were ſurpriz'd to find him a ſort of phyſician, arguing clearly, and with the greateſt propriety on the animal oeconomy. However, we did not ſuppoſe there were any phyſicians in this country, ſince the inhabitants liv'd to ſo great an age. *Taiſaco* obſerving our ſurprize, told us, that indeed there were no perſons among them who made a trade of curing others, every man being his own phyſician, in which, ſays he, we imitate the example of all the brute creation, who in all their infirmities have recourſe to nature only; that beſides, his countrymen were ſeldom indiſpos'd, and never but when they infring'd their laws of health; that they always conſulted their own reaſon and

and experience on theſe occaſions; and as every man was thoroughly acquainted with his own conſtitution, which he ſtudied thoroughly, they cur'd themſelves with the greateſt eaſe.

As he had mention'd the degree of application they beſtow'd on the ſciences, and the eſteem they had for letters, I ask'd him which ſciences they cultivated moſt. He anſwer'd, that in general they cultivated all, but that they ſet the higheſt value on mathematicks and phyſicks; that generally, they preferr'd to the ſtudy of the ſublime ſciences, thoſe of the polite arts, ſuch as muſic, poetry, eloquence and painting; becauſe, as theſe arts amuſe the mind agreeably, and ſooth the ſenſes, they conſequently were of advantage to preſerve health and prolong life.

Our poetry, ſays he, is not like that of the *Spaniards*, whoſe verſe, notwithſtanding the ſublimity and majeſty of their language, has a tedious, diſagreeable cadence, which proceeds from the affected grandeur and monotony of

their words. Beſides, rhime, tho' 'tis thought a beauty, and is, as I have been inform'd, the characteriſtic of the verſe of moſt *European* nations, 'tis yet in my opinion a contemptible invention, and a childiſh affectation. What can be more ridiculous, and even more tireſome to the ear, than that periodical return of ſimilar ſyllables, plac'd regularly at the end of every line, with the ſame meaſures and the ſame pauſes? If nothing pleaſes the ſenſes more than variety, how could men be ſo ſilly as to imagine that the ear would be delighted with uniform and ſimilar ſounds? Rhime muſt certainly be a prodigious reſtraint to a poet, and can never produce any thing that is capable of giving ſtrength or grace to a diſcourſe, or of moving the ſoul. I formerly could not forbear laughing, to ſee the heroes of the *Spaniſh* tragedies die in rhime. But the moſt abſurd circumſtance of all, was, to ſee at the ſhifting of a ſcene, the perſon who came laſt upon the ſtage, and cou'd not poſſibly have heard the verſe that was

repeated

repeated the inſtant before he ap-pear'd, rhime nevertheleſs to the laſt verſe, which had been ſpoke in his abſence, juſt as tho' he had heard it. To ſay the truth, ſays he, I have no notion of your *European* taſte, nor the folly and extravagance of your Wits. Our verſification is purely metrical, and conſiſts of long and ſhort ſyllables, whence there reſults a variety of harmonious ſounds, which, by the different degrees of their ſlowneſs or rapidity, expreſs and excite, at one and the ſame time, the ſoft or impetuous impulſes of the ſoul.

Such, anſwer'd I, was the verſe of the *Greeks* and *Romans*, nations of great renown in antient times, from whom we borrow'd all the arts and ſciences which now flouriſh among us. Tho' their languages are now dead, and the latin only makes a figure in our colleges and ſchools, (we generally learning it in our infant years, purely to forget, or make no uſe of it the remaining part of our lives;) we yet have men among us, who, not only cultivate, and devote a conſiderable

conſiderable part of their time to ſtudy the rules and genius thereof, but alſo take a pleaſure in compoſing admirable verſes in that language, tho' no body reads them. Theſe verſes are much more nervous, and boaſt a finer grace than ours: and a circumſtance which proves their genuine merit and beauty, is, that ſome poets among us write in that language; tho' they are ſure not to be underſtood.

'Tis great pity, ſays I, that the taſte for this harmonious verſe ſhou'd be loſt, and that, by a fatal effect of our ignorance, we ſhould be forc'd to prefer to it our vulgar, harſh, and uncouth ſounds. The language of the antient *Romans*, was, about an hundred years ſince, ſpoke and writ by all the learned and witty in *Europe*; who by means of this common tongue, could mutually communicate to one another their ſeveral lights, and diſcoveries. But the vain and empty deſire of being read and underſtood by the ignorant, made them neglect that language; the applauſe it obtain'd, being too

too little to ſatiate their boundleſs vanity. Hence it is that they can't now underſtand one another without an interpreter, or are oblig'd to while away their time in learning ſeveral vulgar tongues. This abuſe, ſays I, is ſtill more ſenſible with regard to *England*, than any other nation in *Europe*. Our † dry and almoſt inharmonious tongue, is hardly underſtood out of our own iſlands; and yet our Literati ſtill write in it; ſo that one would be apt to conclude, they either were afraid, or diſdain'd to let foreigners ſhare with them in their riches. Poſſibly too they intend to force, in ſome meaſure, the republic of letters to adopt their tongue, or in other words, to rank it among the learned languages, and put it upon the ſame foot with thoſe of *France* and *Italy*, which for ſome years have boaſted this noble prerogative.

CHAP.

† *The* Engliſh *reader will call to mind on this occaſion, that our author is writing a romance.*

CHAP. IX.

Deſcription of the village of the Cerebellites, *and of the four Harpſichords. Admiſſion of a new* Cerebellite.

WHILE we were diſcourſing in this manner, we almoſt got inſenſibly to a village, which is very famous in this country, and call'd by the inhabitants *Scaricrotariparagorgoolao.* I was very much ſurpriz'd to view the places which lie round about it, they having ſomething very whimſical in them. I obſerv'd on high mountains, meadows that were water'd by ſeveral pumps, and vineyards on the banks of rivulets; fountains on the craggy tops of rocks; caſcades every ſtep we went; and lone ſummer-houſes built in a very particular taſte, expos'd to every wind that blows, on the top of which a numberleſs multitude of loud-ſounding weather-cocks and moon-dials were plac'd.

What

What you now ſee, ſays our guide, is the celebrated village of the *Cerebellites* of our nation. It was a very difficult matter for him to deſcribe this kind of men, whom he at laſt confeſs'd paſs'd all deſcription; however, we comprehended that the *Cerebellites* were very like thoſe we call in *Engliſh*, maggotty fellows, and the *French*, *Calotins*, a ſett of people, whoſe fruitful brain, notwithſtanding the fire which conſumes it, is productive of the moſt odd and extravagant whims. 'Tis now, ſays he, the fourteenth day of the moon, a day with them ſacred to mirth; you muſt ſee their exerciſes and amuſements. However, theſe people are neither fools or madmen; or if we muſt give them that name, they are at leaſt very witty madmen, and of a moſt amiable caſt of mind. To ſay the truth, were it not for this ſpecies of jovial creatures, whom providence has diſpers'd up and down our globe, for the pleaſure and delight of wiſe men, methinks we ſhould lead very melancholy lives. And indeed I believe there

there is no country but has its *Cerebellites*. Let us, says he, first go this way, for they generally meet in the large summer-house which you see to the left.

Being got there, *Taisaco* presented us immediately to the president of the assembly, who was short of stature, lean, and active; and his bald pate was cover'd with a *calot* or scull-cap, made of a metal more resplendent than those of the rest of the company. All the *Cerebellites*, overjoy'd to see two foreigners, spectators of their periodical games, were wonderfully polite, and seated us in the most honourable place, a little after which a kind of ball was open'd.

That which chiefly engag'd my attention, was the *Orchestra* or music, compos'd of four harpsichords, which did not play in concert, but one after another. The first, to the music of which they danc'd, was made of latten wire, at the end of which a great number of little bells, of a due proportion between the several sizes, were hung, whose

whoſe clappers being put in motion by a light and skilful hand, gave a ſhrill and harmonious ſilver ſound, and the cadence thereof was highly worthy a *Cerebellite* ear.

The concert was follow'd by a ball, compos'd of one family only. The great grand-father ſung the firſt treble, his ſon the ſecond treble, his grand-ſon the baſe, and his great grand-ſon the counter-tennor.

The bell-harpſichord was not employ'd in this concert, its ſound being too ſhrill to accompany the voices; but another was us'd, made like ours, except that the ſtops, inſtead of making the jacks jump up and down, and ſhaking the latten wire by their motion; turn'd, by ſecret ſprings, a certain number of ſmall wooden wheels, cover'd with a kind of roſine, each of which turning about, made the cat-gutt ſtring ſound, which was contiguous to it, much after the ſame manner as our crowds, that have a wheel inſtead of a bow.

I thought this harpſichord infinitely ſuperior to thoſe of *Europe*, on which, ſuch as are skill'd in this inſtrument know, the player can neither increaſe, diminiſh, or hold on the ſound; but that they always have a harſh and grating kind of ſound, tho' play'd upon by the fineſt finger. This on the contrary was vaſtly ſweet, in proportion to its loudneſs: the performer could with great eaſe, make a cloſe ſhake, hold on, diminiſh or ſwell the ſound; ſo that methoughts I heard one of *Corelli*'s or *Vivaldi*'s concertos, perform'd by two *Violoncelli* or four ſtring'd baſe, and four *Italian* fiddles.

I have lately employ'd a famous muſical inſtrument-maker in *London*, to make a harpſichord after the abovemention'd model, and don't doubt but all the harpſichords in *Europe* which have hitherto been us'd, will then be as much deſpis'd as the guitar, the lute, and theorbo; inſtruments which are now as much out of date, as the perſons who delight in playing upon them. However, I thought

thought proper to make ſome little improvement in that inſtrument, by the advice of a perſon who is one of the fineſt players in *England*. Inſtead of that multitude of wheels, each of which by turning about, moves its correſpondent ſtring; he hinted to me, that it would be better to reduce them all to one, and of a ſize proportionable to that of the harpſichord, which is always to turn by the motion of the player's foot. So that, as in the harpſichord of the *Cerebellites*, the little wheel runs to the ſtring; here, on the contrary, the ſtring will always go after the great wheel; which is much more ſimple, more natural, and eaſy for the performer.

This concert, in a grave ſtyle, was follow'd by a little burleſque one, that gave me the higheſt delight, and was perform'd by the third harpſichord, the form thereof was intirely new. Fifteen pigs of various ages were plac'd in ſo many different cages or holes. Under each of the ſtops of the harpſichord, long needles were fix'd perpen-

dicular, the points whereof were directly oppoſite to the pig's backs. Now, according as the muſician apply'd his skilful fingers to the ſtops of the harpſichord, the needles always run into the pigs, which being of different ſizes, broke into plaintive notes, ſome ſqueaking a third, others a ſixth, ſome a fifth, and others again an octave. The hogs which were to roar out the baſe, were of a tolerable bulk, and ſeem'd to grunt *Howbn*, as the little pigs ſqueak'd *Howibn* moſt deliciouſly. And in order that the ſound which each of theſe ſweet animals breath'd, might end clearly and regularly, and not be rugged and uncouth to the ear, there were pedals or lower keys in this kind of organ, which, by means of ſeveral thongs that were fix'd tight to the pig's ſnouts, made them ceaſe their harmony, whenever the player preſs'd the ſtops with his foot. I have ſometimes been at concerts in this taſte, when the harmony has not been ſo beautiful, nor the voices altogether ſo ſweet. The inventor of this inſtrument

ment informs me, that he is now tutoring a ſett of cats, and teaching them to ſing; a hint he borrow'd from an ingenious *Cerebellite*, who writ a book on this ſubject.

But a circumſtance which gave me the greateſt pleaſure, and at the ſame time the higheſt idea of the *Cerebellite* genius, was, the fourth harpſichord, of which we *Europeans* have no notion. The long life which the inhabitants of that country are indulg'd, gives them an opportunity of aiming at, and attaining perfection; whereas 'tis the very reverſe among us, life being ſhort, and art long. This inſtrument, which indeed is made ſomething like the harpſichord, and therefore went by that name, tho' it does not any way relate to muſic, is call'd in their language, *Tir-a-ſlook*, that is, an ocular harpſichord, or *Tir-a-crac*, as much as to ſay, dramatic harpſichord; and is never us'd but at the repreſentation of automatonic comedies, or puppet-ſhews. A *Cerebellite* who was wonderfully well ſkill'd in this art, by the ſwift motions

and different ſweep of his nimble fingers, which he preſs'd upon different ſtops, exhibited and mov'd up and down upon a ſtage, that roſe up at one end of the harpſichord, ſeveral figures like to our puppets; and enliven'd them by the ſituations, poſtures, attitudes and various geſtures, which his intelligent fingers communicated; and by an agreeable kind of ſqueak he gave them, diſguiſing and modifying his own voice, an hundred different ways, to my great ſurprize.

The poet, who writ the piece repreſented by the dramatic harpſichord, was preſent. This virtuoſo, ſays *Taiſaco* to me, is a noble ſoul, who does not labour in the view of acquiring a chimerical glory, for this he deſpiſes. All he propoſes in theſe kind of pieces, is, to exhibit to the public a polite and at the ſame time an uſeful entertainment. As ſome little ſatyrical pieces have been levell'd at him, with regard to the motives which prompt him to cultivate the muſes; our poet, enflam'd with a truly philoſophical bra-

very,

very, has taken for his device an aſs eating of thiſtles, with this motto, *Let them prick, ſo they do but feed me:* to ſhew, that he ſcorns the biting ſatyrs which his poems draw upon him. Theſe poems, tho' laugh'd at by the public, are yet excellent in the opinion of his appetite, which never fails to applaud them.

After theſe diverſions, we were told that a *Cerebellite* was going to be matriculated; a perſon, whoſe numberleſs ſhining actions, and works of wit, had merited him a place in that illuſtrious body. 'Twas affirm'd, that this worthy proſelyte had ſollicited this honour very earneſtly; it being granted to thoſe only who ſue for it in the moſt urgent manner. The new member, puff'd up with a haughty modeſty, and aſſuming the air of a raſh philoſopher, advanc'd into the midſt of the aſſembly, and throwing himſelf at the feet of the preſident, firſt took an oath to obſerve all the ſtatutes of the ſociety, which were reduc'd under three heads, in-

cluding the whole of human life, *viz.* thoughts, words and actions.

With regard to thoughts, he promis'd ſolemnly, firſt, to follow always the firſt, and never to regard the ſecond; the *Cerebellites* maintaining that the ſecond thoughts are not preferable to the firſt. 2dly, Never to think as the reſt of the world do; but always to hunt after ſomething new, ſingular and bold. 3dly, Not to conſider taſte as a part of the judgment, but a *ſixth ſenſe*. With reſpect to words, he promis'd, 1ſt, To ſpeak much, and for that purpoſe to treaſure in his memory a great number of tales and ſtories, without regarding whether they were ſmart or trifling. 2dly, To accuſtom himſelf ever not to think, till immediately after he has ſpoke. 3dly, To expreſs himſelf always in a new and uncommon manner. Laſtly, with regard to actions, he oblig'd himſelf to deſpiſe what we call cuſtom, uſe, decorum; and to preſent the public, once a year at leaſt, with ſome agreeable ſcene. After taking this oath before the preſi-

dent,

dent, the candidate receiv'd from his hands the honourable badge of his dignity, which was a ſcull-cap of ſhining-metal. He then made a ſpeech by way of thanks, in which I was aſſur'd that, according to cuſtom, he had wittily ſatyriz'd the ſociety into which he was then incorporated.

I thank'd my guide, for making me ſpend the day ſo agreeably, and ſaid to him, that 'twas a great pity, the *Cerebellites* in *England*, had not ſuch aſſemblies, and did not form a particular body: that indeed the *French*, a nation bordering upon our iſland, had form'd a kind of order or regiment of theſe: but then, that they generally enliſted people againſt their wills, which was contrary to the rights and privileges of a people; that they had no correſpondence with, and hardly knew one another; that few of them wou'd take a jeſt, eſpecially if they were perſons of ſome rank; and that they conſider'd the ſuffrages, and letters of aſſociation with which they were honour'd, as ſo many perſonal ſatyrs: that how-

ever, nothing could be more useful than those letters call'd *brevets* or *commissions*, since they might be of service in checking the stupid pride of some *Frenchmen*, and curbing their mad sallies; that the dread of being maliciously incorporated in this burlesque regiment, often prevented their making themselves ridiculous in a notorious and public manner; insomuch that this silly society was to them a school of wisdom, or rather a preservative from folly.

CHAP. X.

Manners and government of the Letalispons. *Their notions of sovereign power.*

AS I ever had the curiosity, in what country soever fortune cast me, to enquire into the particular customs of the people, and the form of their government, I suppose that the reader will expect something here on those heads, with regard to the *Letalispons*. We have hitherto seen, that this

this people make the preſervation of life the chief article, and wiſely conſider it as the baſis of all happineſs. The extreme care they take of their health, prompts them to ſhun every thing that may ruffle the mind, whence it is, that they are never ſeen in a paſſion. They neither hate, perſecute, or tear one another to pieces, by malicious aſperſions, or barbarous calumny. Not a man among them, has one enemy, becauſe no one offends his friend or neighbour; and if thro' frailty or inadvertency a man ſhould happen to let drop ſome ſhocking expreſſion, 'tis immediately pardon'd and atton'd for.

I remember, that having told them one day, how in *England* an offended perſon loſt his honour for ever, in caſe he did not revenge the affront he had receiv'd; they anſwer'd, that among the *Letaliſpons*, diſhonour always reflected upon the offender, who by his injury had committed an act of injuſtice; and that in order to remove the witneſs of it, he, properly, ought to wiſh the deſtruction of the injur'd perſon,

ſon, were it lawful to deſire ſuch a thing. They cou'd not conceive, that men, who boaſt a rational ſoul ſhould draw their ſwords, and expoſe themſelves, not only to kill another for ſpeaking a bare word, and ſometimes for a nod, or wink; but alſo to venture their being run through the body, to revenge the affront they receiv'd. Were it not for this, ſays I, we ſhould inſult one another frequently, but the fear of revenge, makes us more polite; and it has been obſerv'd, that fear prevails much more among ſuch as wear at their ſides an inſtrument with which they may puniſh injuries, than among thoſe who by their profeſſion, are forbid to uſe this ſlaughtering weapon.

Your mutual reſpect, ſays he, flows wholly from cowardice, and if you ſpare one another 'tis thro' fear; but wou'd it not be much more laudable, were reaſon and equity the motives of it. But ſince revenge is ſo familiar to you, how came you to have ſo little notion of it? To kill an enemy is not revenging one's ſelf, 'tis downright cruelty;

cruelty; to revenge, is properly making the offender uneasy, and forcing him to repent of the injury he has committed; but in case he is kill'd, how will it be possible for him to repent? He then is secur'd from anguish of every kind; whereas the revenger is left in a state of uneasiness, expos'd to remorse, and the dread of punishment.

Let not the reader be surpriz'd at this odd way of reasoning. The *Letolissons* abhor to shed not only human blood, but that of the meanest and most groveling animal, as was before observ'd. However, the love of their country, and the necessity of self-defence, rouzes their courage, and inspires them with a spirit of intrepidity, when any of the neighbouring nations attack them; they looking upon it as lawful to kill those who would murther them. But then they never, in a time of peace, and when they are in their country and with their families, wear offensive weapons to force either awe or respect. The only use they make

make of arms is to kill wild beaſts, or repulſe the enemies of their country.

Marriages are here conducted after a different manner from ours, where the girls are always a clog to the family, and the handſomeſt, in caſe they have but ſmall portions, can hardly meet with husbands. In this country, pretty women are always purchas'd, and are as good as an eſtate to their fathers. Such as are but tolerably handſome, are generally taken without a fortune; but as for thoſe who are very ugly, and of a deprav'd and ſtupid caſt of mind, they frequently ruin their unhappy fathers, who are bound by the law to get them husbands. In a word, a high regard is always had to good ſenſe and wit, whether in the beautiful or ugly.

Further, a young man always purchaſes cheaper than one advanc'd in years; ſo that a handſome, witty, young fellow, ſometimes gets a lovely, witty creature, without paying a farthing for her. The qualities on each ſide are always weigh'd, and they ever have regard

regard to the circumſtances of the man who marries.

The *Letaliſpons*, are not, like us, fir'd with an inſatiable thirſt of riches, neither do they deſpiſe them, but only blame thoſe, who from a philoſophical principle, ſeem not to concern themſelves about wealth, and wholly diſregard it. To deſpiſe riches, is, in their opinion, deſpiſing the opportunity of practiſing ſeveral virtues. Poverty gives occaſion to exerciſe our courage and patience only; whereas affluence, on the contrary, gives us an opportunity of diſplaying our temperance, our modeſty, our diſintereſtedneſs and generoſity.

They conſider beauty, whether in a man or woman, as a very valuable jewel; not becauſe of the pleaſure which exterior charms may give, but in conſideration of the cloſe tye that is between ſoul and body. Their general notion is, that an ugly, ill-ſhap'd perſon, has a rankled ſoul; and that thoſe of a handſome man, or a beautiful woman, are commonly of an amiable nature, unleſs

unleſs education happens to change the uſual courſe of nature; which makes me call to mind the ſaying of *Socrates*, who ſpeaking of himſelf, ſays, that the uglineſs of his body was a ſign his ſoul was of the ſame caſt; but that he had in ſome meaſure leſſen'd the deformity of the latter by his great care and pains. However, they don't look upon this as an infallible rule; but think that thoſe who give their honeſt countenances the lie, are more guilty than other people, becauſe they deceive the eye, by betraying the publick promiſe which nature had drawn on their countenances. As deform'd and miſhapen Perſons don't impoſe upon any one, they are therefore thought to be leſs guilty.

The *Letaliſpons* adminiſter juſtice with great integrity and uprightneſs. One very particular circumſtance, which may poſſibly appear incredible in *Europe*, is, that law-ſuits never occaſion the leaſt animoſity between the contending parties. Theſe mutually conſider each other, as perſons who vary in opinion on a doubtful ſubject. Each

defends his right without the leaſt malice or rancour. The parties are even bound by the laws to eat together, at leaſt on the two days which immediately precede the final ſentence; and the cuſtom is, that he who loſes his cauſe, always viſits the perſon who gains it, to congratulate him on his good ſucceſs.

The government was formerly monarchical, and the crown elective; but within theſe hundred years, 'tis a republic; however, this change was not occaſion'd by the ſubjects rebelling againſt their lawful prince, or the inconſtancy and ficklenes of the people; but from the impoſſibility of finding a man who ſhould aſpire to the throne, juſt and rational, and worthy of being rais'd to it. As I could hardly think this was the genuine cauſe of that revolution, *Taiſaco* one day told me, he was ſurpriz'd I found it ſo difficult to comprehend a thing that was ſo natural in itſelf; but to give me a better idea thereof, he thus ſet before me the troubles and inconveniences,

niences, which, in his opinion, attended upon royalty.

Tho' the advantages of ſovereign power, ſays he, may ſeem ſo glorious and inviting, they yet are weak and unſtable. 'Tis true indeed, that the vulgar are dazled with the ſplendor of ſovereign power; 'tis a continual ſeries of honours and reſpect; an abſolute power, on which the happineſs or unhappineſs of a great many men depends: a vaſt profuſion of riches and magnificence: the ſoft enjoyment of all things that highly delight the ſenſes: for theſe we envy kings, but then compare ſuch frivolous advantages with the ſubſtantial miſery which is inſeperable from royalty, and you'll find that a king is very much to be pitied, and that his condition is perhaps of all others the moſt unhappy.

What an aſſemblage of uncommon talents and ſuperior qualities muſt center in that man, who would act the part of a king to advantage? If it be a hard matter to govern one's ſelf, how difficult muſt it be to ſuperintend a numberleſs

berleſs multitude of people; to ſteal upon their affections, and awe them at the ſame time; to correct the abuſes of men, without ſhocking the prejudices they may have imbib'd; and to riſe to great power, without becoming odious? A king ought to be a better man than thoſe over whom he reigns, and the model of all the virtues. But then, how ſhall he reconcile theſe with politicks? How ſhall he become formidable to his enemies, and not oppreſs his ſubjects?

In caſe he be a pacific prince, they'll charge him with being weak and indolent; if he be of a warlike diſpoſition, his neighbours will take umbrage, and his ſubjects will ſuffer for it. Are the gratifications he taſtes, capable of balancing the fatigues he undergoes? His pleaſures are vaſtly inferiour to thoſe which a private man enjoys. They croud upon a monarch unſought: he does not purchaſe them like the generality of the world, by agreeable cares: he is inſenſible of thoſe things which

give them the greateſt reliſh, I mean difficulty and reſiſtance; he is altogether unactive in his inſipid pleaſures; he ſlides, he ſlumbers.

With regard to the pleaſures of the mind, a king never taſtes thoſe of praiſe and approbation in a pure and unaffected manner. He is ſenſible that ſuch perſons as are moſt laviſh of their incenſe, are not at their liberty, nor dare to refuſe it him. He is not ſure of ſucceeding in any one thing, unleſs it be in breaking his horſe; for in all other exerciſes, every thing bends to him, and acknowledges his ſuperiority; his horſe only is neither a flatterer nor a courtier.

The grandeur of a monarch lays him under the utmoſt conſtraint. Inceſſantly depriv'd of the liberty of viſiting foreign countries, he is, in ſome meaſure, a priſoner in his kingdom, and a captive in his court, where he is almoſt perpetually ſurrounded with an importunate croud of courtiers, who watch all his motions, and ſtun his ears; ſome with ſuing for places, and

and others with thanks for favours indulg'd. He can never taſte the ſweets of friendſhip, which ſubſiſts only between equals. All the ſervices which are done him, are the effect of cuſtom, of ambition, or conſtraint. And indeed, the moſt wicked princes are as well ſerv'd as the beſt; the ſame reſpect is paid them, and they are honour'd with the ſame ceremonies and elogiums.

But the moſt unhappy circumſtance of ſovereigns, is, that truth never approaches their ears. They generally ſee by other men's eyes; and frequently thoſe they make uſe of on theſe occaſions, are aſſiſted by ſeveral other eyes, on which they rely, and are deceiv'd by them. Hence it is, that they often reward vice, and abuſe or neglect virtue.

I anſwer'd *Taiſaco*, that the reſt of the world did not conſider ſovereignty in this light, but look'd upon the king as the happieſt man in his dominons: that ſometimes one ſingle man, purely to acquire the glory and happineſs of

reigning over a little ſpot, made a conſiderable part of the univerſe tremble, and deſtroy'd a million of men, half of whom fought on his ſide, and the other half on that of his rival; that 'twas a maxim among ambitious conquerors, that a crime ceas'd to be ſo, when a crown is obtain'd by it: that all our hiſtories were fill'd with relations of monarchs, betray'd and dethron'd; of rebellious ſubjects, who had uſurp'd the ſovereign dignity; of tyrants, who had ſacrific'd to their grandeur, all the tender ſenſations of nature and of honour; and had maintain'd themſelves upon the throne, merely by blood and ſlaughter: that the luſt of empire had formerly overthrown the mightieſt republic in the world; that one man had the ambition of governing alone half the ball, and had ſucceeded in his attempt; and that ſome of our monarchs had been puff'd up with the ambitious thoughts of giving laws to the whole world.

Hence,

Hence, ſays I, you may conclude, that ſovereignty does not appear ſo unhappy in our eyes as it does in yours. We are ſo much dazled with the ſpendor of a crown, that it appears in a quite different light to us. There is no man among us, but would willingly ſacrifice all he holds deareſt, to the glory of reigning, could he flatter himſelf with the hopes of ever mounting ſo high. The happineſs of the kingly ſtate is look'd upon as ſo certain, that to expreſs the felicity of a man, we generally cry, that he's as happy as a prince. We look upon the care which is inſeperable from the regal dignity as nothing; 'tis in our eyes the moſt deſirable object in the world, becauſe we are inſenſible how weighty a crown is, when worn with honour.

CHAP. XI.

The ſtory of Taiſaco *and* Amenoſa.

ONE day as I was diſcourſing with *Taiſaco*, under an embowering ſhade, where we breath'd the moſt delicious fragrance, I enquir'd what had engag'd him formerly to leave his native country and viſit *Chili*; whether he was prompted to it by traffic, or a curioſity like to that which had made me abandon mine, purely to enquire into the manners and cuſtoms of diſtant nations? I was not, ſays he, engag'd by any of theſe motives; love only made me tempt all the dangers of the ocean.

About eighteen years ſince, I fell in love with a maiden, whoſe name was *Amenoſa*. Her youth and beauty had enchanted my ſoul, and her father was look'd upon as one of the wealthieſt men of the iſland. I was ſo happy as to pleaſe her; ſhe liſtned to my melting vows, and we both ſhould have then

then been happy, had not the meanneſs of my condition, which my lovely charmer overlook'd, made her father deſpiſe me; for when I deſir'd his conſent to marry her, he gave me a haughty refuſal, and told me I was poor. When I found that my narrow circumſtances were the ſole cauſe of my ill ſucceſs, I reſolv'd to try all lawful methods in order to better my fortune. Tho' this was my fix'd reſolution, I yet was in doubt ſeveral days, what courſe to take. 'Tis very eaſy to form a reſolution of amaſſing wealth, but nothing is more difficult than to ſtrike into the methods which procure it.

I was in this perplexity, oppreſs'd with grief, and abandon'd to deſpair, when I one day met on the ſhore of the ſea, into which I was reſolv'd to throw my ſelf, an intimate friend of mine, whoſe name was *Haſco*. The moment I perceiv'd him, I wou'd have turn'd another way; but *Haſco* immediately advancing, ſtopt me, and having ask'd me with the moſt indulgent

tenderneſs, why I thus abandon'd my ſelf to ſorrow, and mus'd in ſolitude; he beſought me, in the moſt ſoft and paſſionate terms, to lay open my whole ſoul to him. I gratify'd his amicable curioſity, when he ſaid: Had heaven indulg'd me as much wealth as the father of the lovely *Amenoſa* poſſeſſes, I would with pleaſure have divided it with you, in order to make you happy, and give the charming creature to your arms; but you know how little my father left me, ſo that all I have to offer you, is barren advice. I have heard, continued *Haſco*, that eaſtward lies a country which abounds with gold, whence all that comes into our iſland is brought; but that about an hundred years ſince, a ſett of extraordinary men, arm'd with thunder and lightning, had conquer'd it, and cut to pieces, or ſtruck dead with their thunder, moſt of its inhabitants, which had ruin'd the trade we us'd to carry on with that people, and made gold leſs plenty among us. Were you, ſays he, not ſo dear to me, I wou'd adviſe

you

you to visit that rich country; possibly, heaven might smile so far on your wishes, as to point out the methods to you, of amassing vast sums of gold; but then the dangers to which this painful voyage would expose you are so great, that as I am your sincere friend, I cannot possibly persuade you to undertake it.

Alas! says I, the most dreadful dangers cannot intimidate my soul; thrice happy to suffer ten thousand hardships, could I at last but merit my dear, dear *Amenosa!* I thank you, O best of friends! for what you have hinted to me: heaven, which now relents, because of the numberless evils I suffer, most certainly inspir'd you to give me this advice. 'Tis enough, I'm determin'd to set out. *Hasco* finding my resolution fix'd, endeavour'd to divert me from it; especially since he himself had suggested it to me; however, perceiving me inflexible, he spoke thus: since you will venture your life, and I am the cause of this fatal design, I am resolv'd to accompany you, and share

all

all the dangers of your voyage. 'Tis but juſt, ſince I firſt ſet you upon this project, I ſhould be an eye-witneſs of the ſucceſs of it. 'Twas in vain for me to oppoſe his heroic generoſity, whereupon we prepar'd to ſet out together.

The evening before our departure, I went to *Amenoſa*, to bid her farewell, and acquaint her with my departure. She was ſeiz'd with the deepeſt ſorrow at the news, and curs'd ten thouſand times the love of riches, ſince they were the cauſe of our diſtreſs, and would perhaps prove my deſtruction. She employ'd all the endearing arguments ſhe could think of, to divert me from undertaking ſo dangerous a voyage; but I told her it was not ſo hazardous as ſhe imagin'd; and ſooth'd her with the hopes, that providence would indulge me a ſpeedy return, and then tore myſelf from her, after we had mutually ſwore to love one another eternally.

The next day I went to the place where *Haſco* promis'd to meet me, and finding

finding him, we walk'd together to the ſea-ſide, where we went on board a canoo which we had got ready for that purpoſe, and ſtor'd with proviſions. We lie about threeſcore leagues from *Chili*, and had happily made the greateſt part of our courſe, with a weſterly wind, when a ſtorm aroſe on a ſudden, which expos'd us to the greateſt peril. We lower'd our ſail, and row'd with all our ſtrength, to ſtem, if poſſible, the violence of the waves. Our canoo was thrice under water; but the bark of which it was made, being very light and tough, we, by jumping thrice into the ſea, and ſwimming back to our canoo, kept it from ſinking, and turn'd it right again with great dexterity; but while we were thus employ'd, an impetuous wave, which ſwell'd mountains high, wrap'd us round, and waſh'd off my companion whom I never ſet eyes on ſince. Alas! in loſing him, I loſt a kind and moſt generous friend, at a time when I moſt wanted his aſſiſtance. As for my own part, I held the canoo faſt, which I turn'd

over

over, as I had before done ſeveral times. The extremity I was then in, made me not ſo ſenſible of the loſs I had ſuſtain'd, as I was afterwards; and my whole endeavours were to keep myſelf from being ſwallow'd up by the waves.

But now, the wind fell and the waves were huſh'd. Tho' I was prodigiouſly fatigued, I nevertheleſs row'd till night, when it blew a pretty brisk gale, upon which I ſet up my ſail, and took a little reſt. I ran ſo many leagues in the night, that I diſcover'd land the next day about noon. Three hours after, I had the good fortune to get on ſhore on a point of land, call'd cape *Acchamqui*, above *Angud*. I walk'd till night, without meeting one human creature, this part of the country being deſolate and barren. In the mean time, I eat a few roots, that were not very well taſted, and ſome wild fruits, which I found upon the coaſt; and paſs'd the night on a tree, but had very little ſleep.

The next day, after coaſting a long time northward, I met about dusk with ſome

ſome of the natives, who ſtruck with the oddneſs of my habit, came up and ask'd me a great many queſtions, concerning the motives of my coming into their country. Our language differs but very little from that of this people, our country, if we are to credit tradition, having been antiently peopled by a colony ſent from the moſt ſouthern part of *Chili*; ſo that we underſtood one another very well. I anſwer'd very politely, that I was a *Letaliſpon*, who had been invited by curioſity to viſit a nation we were deſcended from, and with whom we formerly had been ſtrictly united, before they were conquer'd, and their country invaded by thoſe blood-thirſty foreigners.

At theſe words tears ſtood in their eyes; they gave me a general account of the numberleſs evils thoſe mercileſs conquerors had made them ſuffer, and afterwards carried me to their houſe, where they treated me with the utmoſt humanity. They told me, I was at liberty to live with them ſo long as I pleas'd; that as their anceſtors were

antiently

antiently ſo nearly related to the *Letaliſpons*, they look'd upon me as one of their countrymen; but then they adviſ'd me not to diſcover myſelf to their tyrants, for ſo they call their *Spaniſh* conquerors: for theſe, ſaid they, will poſſibly imagine that your country is as fruitful of gold as ours; in that caſe, they'll oblige you to guide them to it: then ſacrifice your wife and children, to force you to diſcover your treaſures, and afterwards murther you. Prevent all this from befalling you, by concealing yourſelf, till ſuch time as you have catch'd our air, and learnt our cuſtoms, and may ſeem to be a native of this country.

I thank'd them for their advice, and ask'd whether the *Spaniards* were the ſole proprietors of their gold mines, and were only allow'd to approach them? They alone, ſays he, reap all the benefit. They have unjuſtly ſeiz'd thoſe things which heaven had allotted us; and not contented with this, they alſo wou'd force us to bury our ſelves in the bowels of the earth, to adminiſter

adminiſter to their avarice; however, they have not yet ſucceeded in this part of their tyranny.

I then began to think, that I had undertaken a painful voyage to no purpoſe; and therefore reſolv'd to return back into my country, and do all that lay in my power, to get poſſeſſion of *Amenoſa*; or, in caſe fate ſtill oppos'd my wiſhes, to die at her feet. Accordingly, after I had ſpent ſome time in this houſe, and repos'd my ſelf after my great fatigues, I took leave of the whole family, and ſet out for *Acchamqui*, where I had left my canoo.

I had ſcarce walk'd ſix leagues, before I met ſeveral *Spaniards* a hunting, who ſeeing I was a foreigner by my dreſs, ſtopt me, and asking me where I was born, I thought proper to tell them that my native country lay at a great diſtance from theirs. I did not conſider that I betray'd my ſelf, in anſwering them in the ſame language they ſpoke to me, *viz.* the *Chilian*. They ask'd me whether my country was rich? I reply'd no, and that I

my

my ſelf was an emblem of its poverty. An unexpected ſtorm, ſays I, threw me unhappily on this coaſt, and I am endeavouring to return to my own country. I would have proceeded on my way, but the chief of the *Spaniards* ſtopping me, ſpoke to me as follows. Stranger, I am pleas'd with your perſon; come to my houſe, and I'll give you a creditable employment in it; and whenever you think proper to return back into your country, you ſhall have leave to do it, and I'll give you a reward that will far exceed your expectations.

I turn'd pale at his propoſal; being afraid that he intended to ſend me to work in the mines. The *Spaniard* obſerving my confuſion, bid me fear nothing; forget, ſays he, whatever the natives of the country may have told you to our prejudice; and rely entirely on my word, and I'll do all that lies in my power to make you happy. Had I the leaſt deſign upon your liberty, I could now force you to follow me; but I ſhall content my ſelf with intreating you to do it.

Theſe

These kind expressions stole upon my heart, and notwithstanding I was prejudic'd against his countrymen, I yet thought my self oblig'd to hazard my life and liberty, and sacrifice them to the hopes of getting gold. I imagin'd, that in case the *Spaniard* was as good as his word, I should soon be in a condition to merit *Amenosa*. Upon this I bow'd very low to *Don Fernandez de la Chirade*, for that was the *Spaniard*'s name, as a token that I accepted his offer; upon which he immediately order'd one of his servants to mount me on his horse.

We got to his house about evening. 'Twas a magnificent edifice, built on the sea-shore. On one side of it lay a meadow a of a prodigious extent, cover'd with a never-fading green, and surrounded with hills crown'd with tufted trees. On the other side, was a view of the sea, which sometimes rais'd its tempestuous waves to the clouds, but generally was smooth as a mirrour. The furniture of this house was vastly rich. Gold dazled the eye in every apartment, and the most trifling part of the moveables, were made of that precious metal.

My maſter, (for tho' I was not his ſlave I yet was his dependant,) made me ſit at table with him. Seeing it was cover'd with viands of various kinds, I roſe up, and refus'd to touch any thing; and at the ſame time, begg'd *Fernandez* to let me eat after the manner of my own country, and abſtain from the fleſh of animals. He indulg'd my requeſt, upon which I immediately went into the garden and there gather'd roots, herbs and pulſe, which I cook'd and eat before him. Supper being ended, he took me aſide, and ſaid, that as none of the *Spaniards* who waited upon him, underſtood the *Chilian* language, he was very glad he had met with me; and that he would ſooner truſt me than the natives, becauſe of the great averſion they bear to his countrymen: that ſuch of the natives as were his domeſticks, ſought every opportunity to injure and betray him: that, as he was perſuaded I had not the ſame motives to hate him, I therefore ſhould ſuperintend their behaviour; and that he hop'd my zeal and fidelity would

would ſecure him from all their plots: that as I ſpake their language, it gave me an opportunity of gaining their eſteem; of diſcovering their deſigns, and keeping them to their duty. I promis'd to act honourably, and be ever faithful to him; and indeed I kept my promiſe, which won his heart ſo entirely, that he unboſom'd himſelf to me without the leaſt reſerve.

I not only was appointed to inſpect the conduct of all the natives of the country that were in his ſervice, but was alſo truſted with the keys of his treaſure; ſo that I was happy, were it poſſible for a man to be ſo, who is far remov'd from the woman he idolizes, and a country he pants to reviſit. Beſides, I daily beheld a ſpectacle, which was vaſtly ſhocking to a *Letaliſpon*; I mean, that I ſaw *Fernandez* and the reſt of the *Spaniards*, inhumanly murther the moſt amiable animals, and afterwards feed upon them. I wou'd ſometimes employ prayers and entreaties, in order to prevent the ſlaughter of thoſe creatures; but they, inſtead of

being mov'd with my compaſſion, would laugh in my face; and ſo great was my anguiſh, upon this account, that nothing but a thirſt of acquiring gold, which love only had inflam'd me with, could have prevail'd with me to reſide among them. However, heaven, by a moſt ſingular and unexpected accident, reſtor'd me to my country, and crown'd all my wiſhes, as the reader will ſoon find.

Some of my countrymen who go out in canoos had found the body of *Hoſco*, on the coaſts of their iſland, thrown thither by the tide. They had view'd it; and as he was very like me in the face; of the ſame age and ſtature; not to mention that I was much better known than he, and that my departure had made much more noiſe, they had taken the diſfigur'd corps of my dear friend for mine. Immediately a report of my death was ſpread over the whole iſland. My mother, who lov'd me tenderly, was deeply afflicted at the news, and going to *Amenoſa*'s father, ſhe broke out into a thouſand reproachful expreſſions, and ſaid he was guilty of my death.

death. He did not endeavour to apologize for his conduct, but ſeem'd very ſorry for her loſs, and did all that lay in his power to comfort her.

But the moment *Amenoſa* heard the ſad fate I had met with, ſhe ſhut herſelf up alone in her chamber, and would have kill'd herſelf; when happily, the dread which is almoſt inſeperable from her ſex, ſtopt her trembling arm, as ſhe was going to ſtab herſelf with a dagger. They broke open her chamber-door, to prevent the fatal conſequences of her deſpair, and forc'd the weapon out of her hand; but then it was impoſſible for them to tear away her ſorrows, which made no leſs impreſſion upon her father, who lov'd her with uncommon tenderneſs. Thou art no more, deareſt *Taiſaco*! ſays ſhe, overwhelm'd with grief, thou art no more! my father's ſavage, obdurate, heart; and my ſoft, my tender one, have been thy death; they alſo will kill me, and I'll follow thee. May my ſoul, after it has wing'd its flight, meet in the ſame region with thine, and inform a

body like to that it now animates! Heaven is too juſt and equitable, to ſuffer us to be for ever ſeperated from one another; 'twill certainly unite us together, to reward thy courage and my conſtancy.

Amenoſa, after having thus given vent to her grief, was for ſome time plung'd in a deep melancholy, and did not once open her lips. However, ſhe deceiv'd her father, and all her ſpies; for afterwards aſſuming a leſs gloomy air, ſhe told them, time might poſſibly heal the wound which my death had made in her heart. This her father believ'd, and therefore did not guard againſt the tranſports of her deſpair, which however, at laſt, broke out in the following manner. After having meditated ſome time, on the kind of death ſhe ſhou'd chuſe, ſhe reſolv'd to throw herſelf into that part of the ſea, where ſhe imagin'd I had been ſwallow'd up.

With this reſolution ſhe ſteals from her father's houſe, and runs to the ſea-ſhore, in order to put her fatal deſign

in

in execution. But now, the death ſhe is going to die, makes her ſhudder. What! ſays ſhe, does my coward mind oppoſe the generous reſolution my heart has taken! ah! my heart ſhall triumph on this occaſion, and I'll conceal from it all the horrors of this death, ſince it terrifies me ſo. Immediately ſhe ran to a canoo which lay on the ſea-ſhore, and jumping into it, boldly cut the rope that faſtned it to the ſtrand; hoiſted the ſail; and laid hold of the oars, in order to drive into the main ocean. Then, with a flood of tears, covering her head, ſhe laid herſelf down in the canoo, and abandon'd it to the mercy of the waves, equally wiſhing for, and dreading death.

The wind blew pretty ſtrong weſt-ſouth-weſt, which was very favourable for *Chili*; when the canoo, after having happily made its courſe for twenty eight hours, and gone in a direct line, as tho' it had been ſteer'd by the moſt experienc'd pilot, was met the next day by a *Chilian* woman who was fiſh-

ing, and got three or four leagues from land. This woman, ſurpriz'd to ſee a canoo purſue its courſe, without any hands on board, ply'd her oars, and being come up with it, was much more aſtoniſh'd when ſhe ſaw a young woman on board, in a ſwoon, and half dead. She ſtept into the canoo; took her in her arms, and endeavour'd to recall her to life. *Amenoſa* recover'd from her ſwoon, fix'd her eyes upon the woman, call'd upon me, and then clos'd them again. My lovely maid acquainted me with part of theſe particulars, and the reſt were told me by the woman we are now ſpeaking of; who hooking her canoo to *Amenoſa*'s, carried her to her houſe which ſtood on the ſhore, at a little diſtance from ours.

She had known me ſome years, her husband being a hunter, whoſe houſe I often went to, purpoſely to ranſom ſuch creatures as he caught in his gins and ſnares. I came accidentally into it, a few hours after *Amenoſa* was brought thither.

But

But heavens! how great was my aſtoniſhment when I beheld the darling of my ſoul! ſurely I never felt ſuch emotions either before or ſince; but my joy was mix'd with hope and fear. I was in raptures to meet with her again; but then the deplorable condition I ſaw her in, was more painful than her dear preſence was raviſhing. Is it then you, ſays I, adorable *Amenoſa!* What chance has brought you hither? Alas! to what a wretched ſtate are you reduc'd!

Amenoſa, ſtruck with a voice, which ſhe knew to be mine, open'd her lovely eyes, which were almoſt clos'd in death, and looking upon me with a ſurprize equal to her dejected condition; Do I then, ſays ſhe, deareſt *Taiſaco*, behold ſo ſweet an object? Yes, ſays I, you ſee your tender, your faithful adorer. Cheer up, and be not troubled, but take a little ſuſtenance to ſupport nature. My preſence ſeem'd to revive her; and a ſoft joy diffuſing itſelf over her countenance, leſſen'd its deadly paleneſs. 'Tis univerſally believ'd, ſays ſhe, in our iſland that

you

you are no more, but was buried in the waves. How bleſs'd am I to ſee you again, at a time when I thought of meeting you only in the ſhades below! For this I ventur'd amid the winds and waves, in order to be entomb'd, as I ſuppos'd you had been, in a watry grave.

Tho' I before thought it wou'd be impoſſible for me to love with a greater exceſs of paſſion, I yet at that inſtant, found it more violent than ever. I return'd thanks to heaven, for its goodneſs in ſo happily preſerving the object of all my wiſhes, and earneſtly beſought the good woman of the houſe to take the utmoſt care of my *Amenoſa*. At the ſame time I deſir'd her, not to reveal any of theſe particulars, and promis'd to reward her very handſomely for her care and ſecrecy.

Amenoſa recover'd a few days after, inſomuch that my happineſs would now have been complete, had I been at liberty to return with her into my own country; but my condition of life, my duty, and the beneficence of my patron the *Spaniard*, were tyes I could not eaſily break. However,

However, I had this comfort, that I was at full liberty to viſit my miſtreſs every day, and feaſt my eyes with her numberleſs beauties; and ſhould then have made her my wife, were not children expreſly forbid by the laws, to marry without the conſent of their parents.

In the mean time, *Don Fernandez* fell dangerouſly ill, and knowing that his diſſolution was at hand, and that it would be impoſſible for him to recover, he prepar'd himſelf to die, purſuant to the dictates of his religion, and a little after rewarded all his ſervants. As I had a great ſhare of his eſteem, he bequeathed me an hundred pound weight of pure gold, three thouſand pound of ſilver, and ſome other things of value; deſiring me, at the ſame time, not to forget him, after which he expir'd, to the great grief of the *Spaniards* and *Chilians*, who had ſo long experienc'd his great virtue. Thrice happy region, did all his countrymen but reſemble him!

I then thought of reviſiting my native country with my dear *Amenoſa*, perſuaded

perſuaded it would be impoſſible for her father, when I reſtor'd him his only daughter, whom he ſuppos'd to be dead, and ſaw the treaſure which was left me, to refuſe her to my ardent wiſhes. Accordingly, I provided a ſufficient quantity of fruits, herbs, and roots, and order'd them to be dreſs'd; and after thanking the good man and his wife for their great care of *Amenoſa*, and rewarded them for their ſervices, we both embark'd on board a large canoo, which I had order'd to be built for that purpoſe. I hir'd two skilful rowers, for our greater ſecurity, and deſir'd the good woman, for decency ſake, to accompany *Amenoſa*, promiſing to make her ample amends; and gave her my word, that the ſame canoo ſhould carry her back ſoon. She agreed to my propoſal, and we prepared to ſet out.

As we were juſt going to put off from ſhore, we ſaw at ſome diſtance ſeveral *Spaniards* running towards us, who made ſigns for us to wait their coming up. As we were ignorant of their

their deſign, and ſuſpected they poſſibly wanted to plunder us of our gold and ſilver, we did not think proper to comply with the ſignal. Finding this, they fir'd upon us; but we were out of the reach of a ball; and a furious lioneſs ruſhing out at the ſame time, they were obliged to fly. However, we immediately cut the rope which faſtn'd the canoo, and made off as quick as poſſible from the ſhore. The lioneſs being almoſt famiſh'd, plung'd into the ſea, and ſwimming after us, was upon the point of ruſhing into our boat, when I laid her over the head with my oar, and hit her ſuch a blow that ſhe duck'd; but coming up again, our watermen ſeconded me ſo well, and we ſtruck her with ſo much violence and dexterity, that ſhe plung'd into the water, and we ſaw her no more. *Amenoſa* herſelf had taken up an oar, and aſſiſted us in keeping the lioneſs off.

Our voyage was ſucceſsful. As it was a dead calm, we could not put up the ſail, but were oblig'd to make

our

our way with the oars, which kept us five days out at ſea. At laſt, we got on ſhore in our dear country, and I immediately carried *Amenoſa* to my mother, who receiv'd us with the utmoſt joy and aſtoniſhment. Is it poſſible! ſays ſhe, claſping me in her arms, for you to be alive! How many tears and ſighs have you coſt me! Your happy return reſtores me to life, by aſſuring me you are ſtill living. And you, lovely *Amenoſa*, go and be happy in the tender embraces of a father who ſtill bemoans your loſs with tears. Both of you ſhall afterwards relate, by what happy turn of providence, we enjoy the inexpreſſible comfort of ſeeing you again.

The next day my mother was to carry *Amenoſa* to her father, but I reſolv'd to viſit him firſt. The inſtant he ſaw me, he cried out, Is it you, *Taifaco*, or your angry ghoſt that is come to torment me? I have atton'd for my crime by the loſs of my dear daughter, whom I refus'd to beſtow on ſo much virtue. She plung'd into

thoſe

thoſe waves which ſwallow'd you up. The ſharp pangs I feel at the remembrance of this ſad accident, is torture ſufficient, and therefore do not heighten my ſorrows: O guilty thirſt of riches, 'tis thou art the wretched cauſe of all my misfortunes! Unhappy father! thou ſtill enjoyeſt the treaſures, but thy daughter is no more. 'Twas thus my preſence awak'd his anguiſh, and aggravated his ſorrows. I endeavour'd to calm his ſoul, by telling him I was *Taiſaco*, who was ſuppos'd to be buried in the waves, and with whoſe death he reproach'd himſelf.

Both your daughter, ſays I to him, and my ſelf, are ſtill living; inform me only whether ſhe ſhall live to be mine only. At thoſe words he embrac'd me with an air of tranſport, and aſſur'd me that no man breathing ſhould poſſeſs her but myſelf. I then related to him all my adventures at ſea; the riches I had got in *Chili*; in what manner his daughter had got ſafely there; and how I had brought her from thence,

accompanied

accompanied by a woman of that country.

He was now in the higheſt raptures, and impatient to bleſs his eyes with the ſight of *Amenoſa*, when my mother brought her. The moment ſhe ſaw him, ſhe fell on her knees, and begg'd him to excuſe the grief ſhe had brought upon him. He took her affectionately in his arms, and after ſhedding a flood of tears, ask'd pardon, for the dangers to which he had in ſome meaſure expos'd her, by oppoſing her innocent deſires; then taking our hands, made us claſp with a mutual embrace, in preſence of the witneſſes; and my mother, doing the ſame, we were that inſtant married, according to the cuſtom of the iſland, which requires no other ceremony.

Amenoſa, ſays he, and I, have been married threeſcore and nine years, and nothing has been able to interrupt our felicity. My eſtate, and that of her father, with whom we live, has made our family one of the richeſt and moſt flouriſhing in the whole country. Such were the motives and ſucceſs of my voyage to *Chili*, whither poverty and

deſpair

deſpair had drove me, and whence I return'd rich and happy.

CHAP. XII.

The author going a fiſhing in a canoo with his companion, meets a French *veſſel, which takes them in, and brings them back into* Europe.

DUring the three months I had now liv'd among the *Letaliſpons*, to paſs over the *tædium* and uneaſineſs, which will almoſt inevitably prey upon a man who reſides in a foreign country, whoſe language he does not underſtand; I had a ſtrong deſire to reviſit my native country. Beſides, *Silva* and I could not accuſtom our ſelves to feed always upon roots, which was our only ſuſtenance; and tho' they were toſs'd up with great delicacy, we nevertheleſs loath'd them.

We one day told *Taiſaco*, that the diet we fed upon in his country was too ſevere; that the monks and hermits in *Europe*, men of the greateſt

ſanctity, tho' they made a vow never to eat fleſh, did nevertheleſs make no ſcruple of eating fiſh; that as the element which the fiſh inhabited, was different from that we liv'd in; as we had no correſpondence with them, and that they were not, ſtrictly ſpeaking, inhabitants of the earth, 'twas a ſort of ſuperfluous charity to ſpare their lives; that in caſe we continued to eat after the *Letaliſpon* manner, and feed only upon roots, we ſhould ſoon die; becauſe we had been accuſtom'd to a quite different diet from our infancy.

I ſhould be very ſorry, ſays *Taiſaco*, did our roots, which are ſo beneficial to us, prejudice you in any manner. You very juſtly make a difference, between thoſe animals which inhabit the earth, and ſuch as live in ſeas and rivers. Tho' the latter are inform'd with a ſoul; and are, no leſs than we, the work of the creator, they yet are not our brethren, like the former; for they breathe a different air, and we have not the leaſt ſociety with them; for which reaſon, we don't think

think it a great crime to kill and eat them. However, few among us go theſe lengths; whether it be from a ſort of ſcruple of conſcience, or becauſe that kind of food does not appear wholeſome to us. But as your conſtitution is different from ours, and you cannot poſſibly accuſtom your ſelves to our diet, you are at liberty to catch, and eat fiſh. You may take my canoo in which I ſometimes recreate my ſelf when the ſea is calm; and in caſe you are ſo ingenious as to make nets, and know how to uſe them, you may go up a little bay hard by, where you will meet with ſhoals of fiſh. But then ſport at a conſiderable diſtance from the ſhore, for fear leſt any one ſhould ſpy you, and be offended at the ſight.

We thank'd *Taiſaco* for his goodneſs and condeſcenſion in ſo readily complying with our frailty and weakneſs. On the morrow at daybreak, *Silva* and I took the canoo on our ſhoulders, which being made out of a bark of a ſingle tree, was very

light, together with a ſail and oars; when making for the creek, we got to it without much fatigue. The night before we had made a ſweep-net with packthread, which *Taiſaco* was ſo kind as to give us. We row'd a conſiderable diſtance from the ſhore, as he had deſir'd us to do; and the wind blowing fair, to ſpare our ſelves the trouble of rowing, we hoiſted our little ſail, and without any other aſſiſtance got about four leagues from the ſhore, and even out of the bay.

Juſt as we were going to caſt our ſweep-net, we perceiv'd a large veſſel, at about three leagues diſtance from us. As my eye was more us'd to the ſea than *Silva*'s, I ſpy'd her firſt, and ſaid to him, that ſince heaven, probably, now gave us a favourable opportunity of returning into *Europe*, it was our duty not to neglect it. As we both had our muskets on board, we fir'd together, in order to make the greater report, as a ſignal. In the mean time, ſhifting our rudder and our ſail, we took a quarter wind, and made for the

the veſſel. We ſtill continued firing, in order that they might know what we wanted, and found they underſtood us; for we ſaw them ſhift about a little to the larboard, and ſail towards our canoo, and in an hour's time, we got ſo near, as to ſee ſhe carried *French* colours.

I was very ſorry to leave the iſland of *Letaliſpon*, without bidding adieu to *Taiſaco*. He will ſurely, ſays I, conclude we are loſt, and that muſt certainly afflict him very much. But what ſhall we do in this dilemna! Shall we let ſlip ſo fair an opportunity? *Silva* thought that inſtant of an expedient, which was, that we ſhould firſt get on board the veſſel; and then ſhift the ſail, and fix the rudder in ſuch a manner, that the canoo might get alone into the bay, which did not lie far off; that the wind had chopp'd about, and ſtood fair for *Letaliſpon*; that this being ſo, we ſhould run no hazard in writing a letter of thanks to *Taiſaco*, and therein acquaint him with our departure; that as he would not

fail to ſend after us in the bay, the meſſengers would find both our canoo, and the letter. I was pleas'd with the hint, and having pen, ink and paper about me, I drew up the following letter, while *Sikwa* continued rowing towards the ſhip.

To the moſt excellent and virtuous Taiſaco.

"THE ſtrong deſire, dear *Tai-*
" *ſaco*, we have of reviſiting
" our country, forces us to leave you;
" and to take this happy opportuni-
" ty of going on board an *European*
" veſſel we have now met with. We
" wiſh it may be in our power to re-
" turn on ſhore, to thank you for the
" numberleſs favours you have in-
" dulg'd us; but cannot tell whether
" the captain of the ſhip on which
" we are now preparing to go aboard,
" will allow us time for it. However
" this be, we earneſtly wiſh this let-
" ter may come ſafe to hand, and that
" we may ſucceed in our attempt. Be
" aſſur'd that we ſhall ever entertain

" the

" the higheſt ſenſe of the numberleſs
" obligations by which you have bound
" us; nor ever be ſo ungrateful, as to
" blot the remembrance of them from
" our minds; but ſhall publiſh to the
" whole world, that wiſdom and vir-
" tue have choſen the iſland of *Letaliſ-*
" *pons* for their reſidence.

John Gulliver, Francis Silva.

We fix'd this letter in ſuch a manner, that it might eaſily be found, and not be blown away. In the mean time, after turning our rudder and ſail, we left the canoo, and ſtept into one belonging to the veſſel, on which we ſoon got aboard. The reader will ſuppoſe that we met with a hearty reception, the *French* being extremely polite and curteous to foreigners. We firſt went and paid our compliments to the captain; told him our names and our country; and afterwards gave him an account, how we had been forc'd to live ſix months among the *Letaliſpons*. The captain told us, he was going directly for St. *Malo*, whence he came

about eighteen months before, and that I ſhould eaſily meet with an opportunity of embarking from thence for *England*, and *Silva* for *Portugal*.

We found they had carried on a private trade in the *South-Sea*, for which reaſon I ask'd the captain whether he had not heard of the *Vulcan*, a *Dutch* veſſel. He anſwer'd, that ſhe ſet out a month before him from the port of *Coquimbo*, and had met with pretty good ſucceſs. I likewiſe ask'd him, whether he had known one Captain *Harrington* who was on board her; he anſwer'd yes, and at the ſame time prais'd him to the skies, and aſſur'd me he was on board her in perfect health, and was gone for *Europe*. I was over-joy'd at the News, and had now a much greater deſire of returning to *England*, ſince it would give me an opportunity of ſeeing again ſo worthy a friend.

The *French* are as incredulous as the *Engliſh*, with regard to incidents of an extraordinary and wonderful nature; ſo that it was with the greateſt reluctance,

ſtance, that I was forc'd, by the officers and chief perſons of the crew, to give an account of the ſurprizing adventures I had met with. *Silva*, whom I had acquainted with the minuteſt particulars of my ſtory, having the higheſt opinion of my veracity, did not doubt but that every thing I told him was fact; and had mention'd them to the captain and ſome other officers; ſo that they themſelves were vaſtly urgent with me to relate the whole my ſelf. But when I had gratified their curioſity, they at firſt took me for an enthuſiaſt, and perhaps a liar. However, after they were a little better acquainted with me, and plainly perceiv'd that I was neither ſilly or crack-brain'd, but a ſincere lover of truth, they began to judge otherwiſe. They firſt liſtned to my adventures purely for amuſement ſake; they were afterwards prompted by curioſity; and then conviction mix'd with aſtoniſhment ſucceeded their incredulity, eſpecially when I told them, that Capt. *Harrington*, whom they knew in *Coquimbo*,

Coquinbo, to be a man of great probity and veracity, had himſelf been an eye-witneſs to my adventures in the iſland of *Babilary*. They were very merry, (the *French* being famous for raillery and extempore wit) on the political government of the *Balibarians*. And as in relating what had happen'd to me in that iſland, I could not omit telling them, that the women of this country look'd upon me as a very handſome young fellow, as my readers have heard; the officers were very waggiſh upon that occaſion. I muſt confeſs they were not to blame: however, no one ought to be offended at the applauſes which a man beſtows upon himſelf, when his relation is ingenuous, and is not dictated by pride or falſhood.

As I had not met with any thing remarkable from my leaving *England* till I came into the ſea of *China*, as was before obſerv'd, nothing extraordinary happen'd to me in my return to *Europe*. To amuſe myſelf on board, as I had no money to play, I drew up an account of my travels in *Engliſh*;

Engliſh; and a *French* gentleman, with whom I had contracted a friendſhip, and who underſtood our language tolerably well, engag'd himſelf to tranſlate it; and his pockets being as empty as mine, he found this employment an excellent remedy againſt the hyp. When we had finiſh'd our reſpective tasks, he deſir'd my leave to publiſh the work, as ſoon as he ſhould be got to *Paris*, which I agreed to.

We arriv'd at St. *Malo*, *Nov.* the 8th 1720, and on the 20th following, I embark'd for *Portſmouth*, and arriv'd ſafe in that harbour.

End of the Laſt Chapter.

CON-

CONTINUATION

BY THE

TRANSLATOR.

FROM the time of my good friend Mr. *John Gulliver*'s return into *England*, *viz.* ſince the year 1720, I have correſponded regularly with him by letter. He was no ſooner got home, but he acquainted me he had found his father, his mother and all the family in good health; that his father was then writing an account of his travels, with a deſign to publiſh it; that as it was near printed off, he would immediately ſend it to me, but in the mean time earneſtly deſir'd me not to ſhew the tranſlation I had made of his travels, to any perſon, till ſuch time as his father's were made public. Some time after he wrote me word, that he had been ſo happy as to meet with his

dear

dear friend Capt. *Harrington*, and was upon the point of marrying one of his daughters.

About the close of the year 1726, he did me the pleasure to send me the two printed Volumes of the *Travels of Capt.* Lemuel Gulliver, before any copy of them was publish'd in *England*, and desir'd me to translate them, which I accordingly did. The success which this work, printed at *Paris* in 1727, met with, is universally known; and how delighted both the *French* and *English* were with the bold and grotesque pleasantry of that piece. I only wish that the work I now offer to the public, may excite their curiosity as much. The * original will be publish'd in *London*, the same day this translation appears at *Paris*. No doubt but a comparison will be made between the travels of the father and those of the son. If the reader should find

* *This is mere banter, for the work is suppos'd to be written originally by the pretended translator.*

find leſs fire, leſs genius and delicacy in this, than in the former *Gulliver*; theſe defects may poſſibly be compenſated, in ſome meaſure, by the gaiety of the images; and the uſefulneſs of the moral couch'd under them, notwithſtanding the incidents are leſs aſtoniſhing.

The author having lately tranſmitted to me a letter concerning his travels, written by one of his friends, I thought it might not be improper to tranſlate and publiſh it. 'Tis with pleaſure I undertake any thing that may be of ſervice to my friends.

A letter from Dr. Ferruginer, *to the author of theſe Travels.*

I am, dear Sir, infinitely oblig'd to you for giving me the peruſal of your travels in manuſcript, the incidents whereof I take to be as true as they are extraordinary. I am not one of thoſe

thoſe ſcepticks, who look upon every thing as fictitious, which happens to vary from their manners, or claſh with their prejudices. Had theſe never ſeen any Negroes, I ſuppoſe that the relations of ſuch as have been on the coaſts of *Senega* and *Guinea*, would ſcarce have gain'd credit with them, or perſuaded them there were ever ſuch men in being. To give my humble opinion, nothing can be a ſtronger indication of a weak mind than ſcepticiſm.

We learn from hiſtory both ſacred and profane, that there were antiently giants; and travellers aſſure us, that *Terra Auſtralis* is now inhabited by men of a prodigious ſtature; and notwithſtanding this is notorious, yet very few people wou'd credit what your father has related of the giants of *Brobdingnac*, or thoſe diminutive creatures the *Lilliputians*. But then, will any one preſume to aſſert, that the battles of *Hercules* and the *Pygmies*, are fabulous; that *Paulus Jovius* was miſtaken, when he aſſures us there were ſeveral of theſe in the north parts of *Ruſſian-Lapland*,

Lapland, and eaſtern *Tartary*; that the *Samojeds* a people ſubject to the *Czar*, are not ſuch as they are deſcrib'd; in a word, that the ſavage *Americans* impoſe upon us, in aſſerting that men of exceeding little ſtature, are found to the north of their continent? I lately read in a faithful deſcription of *America*, that a young ſhe-ſavage, born among the *Eskimaux*, being taken and brought in 1717 to the coaſt of *Labrador*, where ſhe continued three years, affirm'd; that to the north of her country, were whole nations of people, the men whereof were hardly three foot high, and the women much ſhorter.

'Tis certain, that ſuch of the learned as have read *Cteſias*, *Herodotus*, *Pliny*, *Solinus*, *Pomponius Mela*, *Oroſius*, *Manethon*, are much more inclin'd to give credit to the wonderful particulars which are related of remote countries, than the vulgar; whoſe minds being clouded with ignorance and prejudice, are therefore ſuſpicious and diffident. When a man, for inſtance, has read in thoſe

thoſe grave and venerable * authors, that there are nations of *Cynocephali* or men with dogs heads; *Acephali*, or headleſs men; *Enotocetes*, as *Strabo* calls them, or men whoſe ears are of ſuch a length and breadth, that they wrap themſelves up in them; (ſome authors call them *Faneſii*, and others *Satmales*;) *Arimaſpes*, or people with but one eye; *Monoſceles*, or *Sciopodes*, that is people with one leg and a foot only.

When he reads in the ſame writers, that in ſome countries, women never bear children but once in their lives; others, where all the children are born with white hair; that ſome nations are born noſeleſs; others without either mouth or *anus*, and conſequently never eat as we do, but ſupport nature after a very odd manner; a man, I ſay, who has heard of all theſe particulars, is never ſurpriz'd, but eaſily believes the moſt aſtoniſh-

* *See* Cteſ. Fragm. *l.* 7. *c.* 2. Solin. *cap.* 44. Pomp. Mel. *l.* 1. Auguſt. Serm. 37 ad Fratres in Eremo.

ing particulars. For this reaſon § *Pliny* obſerves with great judgment, that many things were thought impoſſible, till experience prov'd the contrary.

But tho' a man were ſo raſh, as to doubt of thoſe particulars, which men of the greateſt learning and underſtanding have tranſmitted to us; he yet cou'd ſcarce preſume to contradict the modern relations of the *Weſt-Indian* iſlands, which confirm the teſtimony of thoſe antient writers? Theſe inform us, that there are in our days, men whoſe ears are of ſo monſtrous a length, that they reach below their ſhoulders; and take a pleaſure in lengthning thoſe of their children, by fixing weights to them: that in ſome † countries, the breaſts of the men are ſo large, that they deſcend as low as their thighs, ſo that when they run, they are oblig'd to tye them round their bodies: that

§ *Lib.* 7. *cap.* 1.

† Joan. de Laet. Ind. Occident. *lib.* 17. *cap.* 7. Sir Walter Rawleigh's deſcription of *Guyana.*

that in *Guyana*, there are men without heads; that in other countries, ſome people never take any ſuſtenance; that others have but one leg, and are beſides ſplay-footed; that others are incredibly tall and corpulent; ſuch as the king of *Juda*, who having not long ſince deſir'd the *French* who trade on that coaſt, to get a ſuit of cloaths made for him in *France*, cou'd never draw that on which they brought him, tho' they had made a tun the ſtandard of his meaſure.

Let us now take notice of the curious incidents mention'd in your own travels. With regard to the manners and cuſtoms of the iſland of *Babilary*, every one knows, that antiently, in ſeveral parts of the world, the women were inform'd with a maſculine bravery, and the men weak and effeminate. We find in the deſcription of *America*, that formerly among the *Ilinois* and the *Sioux*; in *Yucatan*, *Florida* and *Louiſiana*, there were men who wore female apparel all their lives, and led a womaniſh life; like to thoſe prieſts of

Cybele, or *Venus Urania*, mention'd by * *Julius Firmicus*, who always wore a female habit; took the utmoſt care of their beauty and dreſs; painted their faces, and employ'd every art to preſerve the delicacy of their features, and the freſhneſs of their complexions. Thrice happy, that they did not meet with the fate of ſome of thoſe effeminate, male *Americans* abovemention'd, who were devour'd by the maſtiffs which the *Spaniards* let looſe upon them! †

The cuſtom of ſome antient nations is well known, whoſe men us'd to go to bed the moment their wives were deliver'd. On this occaſion, they receiv'd the compliments of their neighbours; and thoſe men-in-the-ſtraw were attended by the very woman who juſt before cry'd out. This was alſo the cuſtom of the *Iberians*, an antient people of *Spain*; of the inhabitants of the iſland

* Jul. Firm. lib. de error. prof. Relig.

† Lopez de Gomora. Hiſt. Gener. de las Indias.

iſland of *Corſica*; of the *Tibareni*, a people of *Aſia*; and is, as we are inform'd, ſtill preſerv'd in ſome provinces of *France* bordering upon *Spain*, where that ridiculous ceremony is call'd *faire couvade*, or to *brood over the young*. 'Tis alſo practis'd by the *Japoneze*, the *Caraibes* and *Calibis*. Can it therefore be ſo ſuprizing, that women ſhould ape the other ſex, and reverſe thoſe laws which to us appear natural?

Why therefore ſhould I wonder, when I read in your relation of the iſland of *Babilary*, that the men thereof are wholly feminiz'd; eſpecially when you inform us of the origin of this cuſtom, which aroſe from the ignorance, idleneſs and effeminacy of its male inhabitants? My ſurprize is leſs, to find that the women ſhould govern there; ſhou'd act a male part, and bear arms, like to the *Menades* or *Bacchantes*, who follow'd *Bacchus* into the field, that is, *Dionyſius* king of *Lybia*; or thoſe female-warriors of antient ſtory, who firſt ſeated themſelves on the banks of *Tanais*, and afterwards extended their empire from the

river *Caicus* to the extremities of *Lybia*. By how many exploits did those illuſtrious *Amazons* ſignalize themſelves? What mighty heroines were *Thaleſtris* and *Pentheſilea!* How glorious were the battles which they fought againſt *Hercules*, *Theſeus*, *Achilles*, and laſt of all againſt *Pompey* in the *Mithridatic* war when they were almoſt extirpated! Further we are aſſur'd by all relations, that there are now women, in *America*, on the banks of the river *Maragnon* or of *Amazons*, who boaſt the ſame martial ſpirit; and if we may give credit to an *Italian* writer, a miſſionary in *Colchis*, mount *Caucaſus* is to this day inhabited by *Amazons*

Is not the inſurrection of the *Babilarian* women, againſt all the male inhabitants, ſomething like the conſpiracy of *Hypſipyle*, and the women of *Lemnos*, who, according to antient hiſtorians, murther'd all their husbands in one night? Did not the *Babilarian* women, do, in ſome meaſure, as much, ſince they, by their bravery and cunning,

ning, trampled on the ſuperiority which the men of that iſland had ſo long enjoy'd?

However, as the male ſex is naturally the ſtrongeſt, this uſurpation of the females would ſeem very odd, did not hiſtory inform us of ſeveral inſtances of the ſame nature.

" The *Lycians*, ſays *Herodotus* in his " firſt book, are partly govern'd by " the *Cretan* laws, and partly by thoſe " of the *Carians*; but they have this " cuſtom, which is wholly peculiar to " themſelves, *viz.* that they take their " mother's name; and if at any time " one man enquires of another what " family he is of, he has recourſe to " that of his mother for his extracti- " on, and thence deduces his genea- " logy. When a woman of noble " birth marries a plebeian, their off- " ſpring is enobled; but if a man of " high extraction and quality, marries " a foreigner, or a woman that was " once a harlot, their children are " plebeians.

" The *Lycians*, ſays *Heraclitus* of " *Pontus* in his firſt book, have no " written laws, but are wholly go- " vern'd by cuſtom. Their women " have maintain'd a ſuperiority over " the men ever ſince they were a " people.

" The *Lycians*, ſays *Nicholas Da-* " *maſc*; ΑΤΚΙΟΙ, revere the women " more than they do the other ſex. " Children are always nam'd from their " mothers; and the females only ſuc- " ceed to eſtates.

This *Gynecocracy*, or government of women, was not confin'd to the *Lycians* only. The *Scythians* and *Sarmatæ* were ſubject to women; and where-ever the *Amazons* extended their conqueſts, they inſpir'd the women with a deſire of triumphing over their husbands. *Iſis*, according to *Diodorus Siculus*, had eſtabliſh'd this cuſtom among the *Egyptians*. *Iſis*, ſays he, was become ſo glorious in this country, that their queens were moſt honour'd, and bore a greater ſway than the kings. In all their marriage con-

tracts, wives were allow'd a full power over their husbands, who were oblig'd to take an oath to obey the former in all things.

Among the *Medes* and *Sabæans*, the women commanded alſo over the men, and their queens always led them to the field, which † *Claudian* expreſſes as follows.

——Medis, levibuſque Sabæis
Imperat hic ſexus, Reginarumque ſub armis
Barbariæ pars magna jacet——

The children of the *Garamantes*, a people of *Afric*, paid the utmoſt ſubmiſſion, and were vaſtly fond of their mothers; but had ſo little regard to their fathers, that they ſcarce ſeem'd to own them for ſuch. One would have concluded, that the children were in common, and equally related to all the men of the nation; becauſe theſe, according to their notion, could not diſcover who were their true fathers, or at leaſt be poſitively certain who were really ſo. 'Twas

† *In Eutrop. Lib.* 1.

'Twas the cuſtom, ſays *Strabo*, among all the people of *Spain*, particularly the *Cantabrians*, for the husband to bring a portion in marriage; daughters always ſucceeded in wrong of the male iſſue, and were entruſted with the care of marrying their brothers. We are farther told, that the *Biſcayans*, who deſcend from the antient *Cantabrians*, ſtill preſerve a ſhadow of this cuſtom, in their marriages and inheritances.

* *Plutarch* relates, that a foreign lady, who liv'd with *Leonidas* the *Lacedemonian*, ſaid one day to the wife of the latter, whoſe name was *Gorgo*, by way of reproach, as a circumſtance which ſham'd the wiſdom of the *Lacedemonians*; that the *Spartan* women only (tho' ſhe was miſtaken) had an abſolute authority over their husbands; and that *Gorgo* reply'd with a haughty tone, that none but the *Spartan* women deſerv'd that preeminence, becauſe they only brought men into the world.

I

* *In Lacon. Apophteg.*

I know that theſe *Gynecocracies* were of a different kind, and that the women abovemention'd exercis'd their authority variouſly. However, we may infer in general from thence; that it is no new, or ridiculous thing, for men to ſubmit to a female government, and for the latter to preſide wholly in the adminiſtration.

Further; every one knows, that in moſt of the negro nations of *Africa*, in all parts of *Malabar*, in ſeveral countries of *India*, and particularly in *America*; 'tis an eſtabliſh'd cuſtom for the heirs in the collateral maternal line, to ſucceed to the throne, in prejudice of the direct line; ſo that children never inherit their father's eſtates. In order, ſays *Owington* in his deſcription of *Malabar*, that the crown may be more certainly preſerv'd in the royal family, the king is always ſucceeded by his ſiſter's ſon; for this reaſon, the king's ſiſter uſes all her endeavours to have a numerous iſſue; inſomuch that any man who offers himſelf as a voluntier upon theſe occaſions, is always well receiv'd.

He

He alſo relates, that on the coaſts of *Malabar*, whenever the king marries; a bramin or prieſt, has the firſt fruits of her majeſty on the wedding night, in order that the people may be convinc'd, that the ſon ſhe will be deliver'd of, is not of the blood-royal; which is the reaſon why the king's ſons never ſucceed him, but thoſe of his ſiſter.

Agreeable to this cuſtom, *Nicholas Damaſc.* relates, that the *Ethiopians* paid the utmoſt honour to their ſiſters; that the kings never nominated their own ſons their ſucceſſors, but thoſe of their ſiſters; and in caſe theſe were barren, or their children died, they then elected that man king, who was moſt fam'd for graceſulneſs, valour and fine accompliſhments.

It muſt indeed be confeſs'd, that *Gynecocracy* in the iſland of *Babilary* is carried to the higheſt pitch; its men being ſo much ſubject to the women, that they are in ſome meaſure their ſlaves. Women indeed have govern'd kingdoms and headed troops; and armies have conſiſted wholly of women, ſuch as thoſe

thoſe of the *Amazons*; but that which ſurprizes me in your iſland of *Babilary*, is, that women only ſhould fill up the ſeveral places of truſt, and manage the whole civil power and the revenues. After all, this is a natural conſequence of *Gynecocracy*; and when we read that women have govern'd kingdoms and fought battles, are we to wonder they ſhould be miniſters of ſtate, magiſtrates, authors, and academicians?

Another difference between the *Gynecocracy* of *Babilary*, and that which was formerly eſtabliſh'd among the nations abovemention'd, is, that the husbands of the latter were neither weak or effeminate; ſo far from it, that the ſuperiority of their women, ſeem'd to inſpire them with greater bravery. Tho' the *Scythians*, the *Garamantes*, and the *Spartans* were ſubject to women, they yet always had the reputation of being inform'd with a martial ſpirit. 'This was, becauſe their women never went into the field; and that their men, notwithſtanding the female ſuperiority, only bore arms. But

I am perſuaded, that where women only form the military power, their men muſt neceſſarily become ſoft and puſillanimous. And indeed, we don't find that in thoſe countries where the *Amazons* govern'd, the men ever exerted themſelves in any warlike exploit.

After all, 'tis as natural for women to be brave, as for men to be effeminate; when one party is active, 'tis no wonder the other ſhould be ſupine and indolent. Our women are timid, weak, and ſluggiſh, becauſe our men are bold, ſtrong and active.

I have read in a relation of *Siam*, that the language of that country has the ſame perfection you aſcribe to the *Babilonian* tongue, which, like the *Engliſh*, does not admit the ridiculous diſtinction of maſculine and feminine genders, in inanimate things; nor has even genders to diſtinguiſh the ſexes. When, for inſtance, the *Siamois*, would aſcribe a certain quality to a woman, which ſtanding alone, is underſtood of man only; they join the adjective *young* to it. As for example, inſtead

ſtead of ſaying the empreſs, they expreſs it thus, the *young* emperour; to denote the wife of a miniſter, they ſay the *young* miniſter, and ſo on. 'Tis plain, this muſt ſooth very agreeably the vanity of their women, ſince they have always the epithet *young* beſtow'd upon them, tho' they are never ſo far advanc'd in years.

Paſs we now to the *Oligochroniſm* or ſhort life of the inhabitants of your iſland of *Tilibet*. I muſt own I have not found any thing ſo ſingular, in either antient or modern writers. However, methinks this is ſomething like what is related of the inhabitants of the weſtern Peninſula of *Indis*, who, we are told, are ſooner ripe than we, and conſequently have a more early decay. In this country people marry at five or ſix years old, and at that age a maiden is made a wife.

In my opinion, the inhabitants of that iſland, argue not only ſuitable to the length of their lives, but alſo agreeable to the idea the antient philoſophers had of the duration of ours. 'Tis

'Tis well known, that *Cato* of *Utica* anſwer'd thoſe who would have prevented him from killing himſelf, that they could not reproach him with abandoning life too ſoon. Nevertheleſs, he was then but eight and forty; but he look'd upon this as an advanc'd age, ſince the greateſt part of men ſeldom live ſo long. 'Tis generally ſaid, that the life of man is of threeſcore and and ten, threeſcore and fifteen, and fourſcore years. However, as men die oftner at twenty or thirty, than at the ages abovemention'd, methinks it would be more natural, to fix the period of man's life at the former term of years, rather than the latter, ſince it is ſo ſeldom attain'd. May we not infer from hence, that we begin to live too late; or in other words, don't enter upon the ſtage of the world ſoon enough, and are too late entruſted with the management of our eſtates and public employments? If men would but change the uſual methods of education, and accuſtom children early to buſineſs, politicks, and domeſtick

ſtick cares; and not make them trifle away their bloom in fruitleſs ſtudies; their life, which, as things are now manag'd is ſhort, would then be much longer.

By the laws of antient *Rome*, no man could enjoy a poſt in the civil government, till he was five and thirty. *Auguſtus* thought proper to retrench five years, and declared that thirty ſhould be the ſtated age; but had he not better have retrench'd ten? 'Tis certain that we are as much men at twenty as at threeſcore; for the mind, after this age, enlarges its views no more; the only advantage is, we gain experience, and the paſſions abate in their violence; but 'tis falſe to aſſert, that the ſoul diſplays itſelf afterwards; that the mind enlarges its views, or the judgment grows ſtronger. Collect the moſt renow'd actions of heroes antient and modern, and you'll find that the greateſt part of thoſe exploits were perform'd by men who had not yet ſeen thirty. *Alexander*, *Hannibal*, *Scipio*, the prince of *Conde*, immortaliz'd

their names before they were come to that age. The moſt famous works of wit, were ſtruck out by young writers. The longer a man lives, the more he learns; but he decays in fire, emulation, courage, vigour, reſolution, beauty, and ſprightlineſs. Methinks the calculation of your *Tibetan* is very juſt, when after having computed the time we loſe in infancy; what we trifle away in a tedious education; that which ſleep bereaves us of; and the tedious hours of ſickneſs, ſorrow, ſpleen, and old age; he concludes, that ſuch among us as attain to the moſt advanced age, have not lived twenty years complete.

The contempt in which the *Tibetans* have ſleep, recalls to my mind a beautiful paſſage of *Plutarch*, who compares it to a collector of the revenues. "In like manner, ſays he, as thoſe "men always ſteal half the money that "paſſes thro' their hands, ſo ſleep robs "us of half our life." This paſſage, Sir, proves two things. Firſt, That in *Plutarch*'s time men us'd to ſleep as they

they do now; and, Secondly, That collectors were then in as good repute as they are in this age.

With regard to the different islands of *Terra del Fuego*, which you say were describ'd by a *Dutchman*, give me leave to observe, that tho' this may be strictly true, yet his relation seems of the same cast with the true history of *Lucian*, I mean fabulous and allegorical. However, tho' you don't warrant the truth of it, I yet am pleas'd with you for illustrating your travels with those fictions, which are far from lessening the character you have for veracity.

But one circumstance, which, so far from appearing fictitious, seems to agree with reason and experience, is, the *Palineacy*, or return of the *Lctalispons* to the bloom of youth. This happy island, was certainly worthy of being consecrated to *Hygeia* and *Panacea*, daughters of *Esculapius*. I am no longer surpriz'd at the long life of those people, when I call to mind the antient anchorets, who tho' they subsisted wholly on roots, herbs, and

dates, did nevertheleſs live a century, as St. *Jerom* tells us of St. *Paul* the hermit, and St. *Anthony*. This regimen was alſo obſerv'd by the famous *Lewis Cornaro*, a noble *Venetian*, who was robuſt and vigorous at fourſcore and ſixteen, when he publiſh'd his book *Of the advantages of being abſtemious*, on which I one day intend to publiſh a commentary, which every man may make uſe of, agreeable to his *Idioſyncraſy*, or particular conſtitution. I ſhall therein diſcover the truth of theſe words of *Celſus*, * *Ignavia maturam ſenectutem, labor longam adoleſcentiam reddit*; and ſhall apply to the human body, what *Virgil* ſays of *Fame*.

† *Mobilitate viget, vires acquirit eundo.*

I ſhall be ſure not to omit the admirable laws of health, obſerv'd by the

* *Lib.* 1. *c.* 2. *That is*, Sloth haſtens old age; activity keeps us long in bloom.

† *Swift from the firſt; and every moment brings*
New vigour to her flights, new pinions to her wings. Dryd.

the *Letaliſpons*, they being, in my opinion, preferable to thoſe of the twelve tables.

If any one ſhould look upon the account you give of the periodical revigoration of thoſe people as chimerical, I ſhall refer them to the learned diſſertation of Dr. *Begon*, of *Puy* in *Vellay*, printed in 1708. This excellent author, mentions ſeveral perſons who actually grew young again, and particularly a marchioneſs, whoſe *menſtrua* return'd in her hundredth year, after they had left her fifty; and in her hundred and fourth year, (the time when he writ his book) as ſtrongly as in the flower of her age. 'Tis well known, that the famous *William Poſtel*, at the age of an hundred and four years, recover'd the full uſe of his reaſon, tho' it had before been conſiderably weakned; that his wrinkles faded away, and his white hair turn'd black; in a word, that he grew young again; and would not have been known by his friends, had not they themſelves ſeen this wonderful metamorphoſis

morphoſis. Now is it not natural to ſuppoſe, that the very change which ſome perſons have undergone, may happen to a whole nation.

To conclude, I am highly pleas'd with the exactneſs of your geography. This circumſtance will be conſider'd as a beauty by all who are acquainted with the ſituation of the different parts of our globe; and your ſtrict regard to truth will do you the greateſt honour. I am with the utmoſt eſteem, &c.

FINIS.